DUTCH REFERENCE GRAMMAR

B. C. Donaldson
B.A. (Hons), Litt. drs.

Martinus Nijhoff / ’s-Gravenhage, 1981
## Contents

© 1981 Martinus Nijhoff bv, The Hague, The Netherlands

ISBN 90 247 2354 x

Niets uit deze uitgave mag worden verveelvoudigd en/of openbaar gemaakt door middel van druk, fotokopie, microfilm of op welke andere wijze ook, zonder voorafgaande schriftelijke toestemming van de uitgever.

No part of this book may be reproduced in any form, by print, photoprint, microfilm or any other means without written permission from the publisher.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Preface</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acknowledgements</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviations</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pronunciation</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Spelling</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Punctuation</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 Cases</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 Articles</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 Demonstratives</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 Nouns</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rules for the gender of Dutch nouns</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plural of nouns</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feminising masculine agents</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Possession</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diminutives</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Proper nouns</td>
<td>see Appendix 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 Pronouns</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Personal pronouns</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Possessive pronouns</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reflexive pronouns</td>
<td>see Reflexive verbs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demonstrative pronouns</td>
<td>61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relative pronouns</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indefinite pronouns</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Interrogative pronouns</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9 Adjectives</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rules for inflection</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The comparative of the adjective</td>
<td>77</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The superlative of the adjective</td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adjectives used only predicatively or attributively</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Predicative adjectives followed by prepositions</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adjectives used as nouns</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formation of adjectives</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Notes on some peculiarities of adjectives</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Preface

Behind this book lie years of frustration, firstly as a student of Dutch and later as a teacher of the language, at the lack of an advanced grammar for the English-speaking student. Advanced text-books of many of the world's languages that have fewer speakers than Dutch have been written for the Anglo-Saxon student. I have always considered it indicative of the Dutch lack of pride and interest in their language that none of them has ventured to fill this gap, and there have probably been too few non-native-speakers proficient enough in the language to do so - a result of there never having been a satisfactory grammar perhaps?

Nederlands Grammatik by J. de Rooy and I. Wikén Bonde (Språkförlaget, 1971) is the only book I know which presents Dutch grammar in anything like the detail that I do here for the foreign student of the language. I am indebted to the said book which I used on numerous occasions to monitor the completeness of my own grammar.

This book, lacking any predecessor upon which to improve, will undoubtedly have many shortcomings, but a beginning had to be made somewhere at some time by someone. Any constructive criticism on any aspect of the book at all will be most welcome. Perhaps future editions will then contain fewer imperfections.

There is also a lack of an advanced course book for Dutch and when the present work was first conceived, I was at odds whether to make it a course book or a reference grammar. On reflection I decided that a reference grammar was more urgent, particularly because a reference work can, with a little effort, be used as an advanced course book, whereas the reverse is not possible. It is hoped, however, that in the future a supplement of exercises geared to specific paragraphs in the grammar will appear. The present work will then go a lot further in fulfilling the demand for an advanced course book as well.

This reference grammar is aimed at the tertiary and upper secondary student as well as at the private student who has a thorough knowledge of grammatical terminology and whose knowledge has already gone beyond what the existing grammars offer. It is not intended to replace the existing beginners' grammars, except perhaps in the case of a student with some prior knowledge who simply wishes to consolidate that knowledge, but it is intended to complement those grammars. There are several very good reference grammars of Dutch for native-speakers of the language (see p. 275) but these are not enough. Firstly the gap between the beginners' grammars and these Dutch grammars is enormous and secondly the approach is simply not the right one for anyone with an imperfect knowledge of Dutch. At that level certain contrasts with the mother-tongue are still necessary; the student is still in need of a degree of prescription whereas the Dutch reference grammars are all descriptive.

The conflict between prescription and description necessitates a certain explanation. It was not possible, nor indeed desirable, to describe every detail of the spoken and written language. I have endeavoured to prescribe forms which I know to be generally acceptable in both the spoken and written languages of the Netherlands. If at any stage I have mentioned spoken forms which are not acceptable in writing, or written forms which are not usual in the spoken language, this has been either clearly stated in each instance or the abbreviations 'coll.' for colloquial, 'arch.' for archaic or 'lit.' for literary have been used. I make no apology for being quite strongly prescriptive at times, although I am aware that some will find forms I don't recommend quite acceptable; there comes a point where the foreign student is not helped by being offered a whole series of alternatives without any recommendation for one form or another. Historical explanation of grammatical forms has been kept to a bare minimum and has only been given where I deemed it necessary for the student's understanding of the particular point, eg. *gij versus *iJ.*

Belgian usage has been scarcely considered at all; to have done so would have rendered certain sections of the book rather unwieldy and in the interests of standardisation and prescription it seemed to me desirable to stick to current usage in the Netherlands, all the more so as the current trend in Belgium seems to be to follow the north in language issues.

My approach to grammar is a conventional one. Objective classification and consistency in lay-out are imperative for a book like this to be successful. I feel that by keeping to the categories the student is likely to be acquainted with from his other language studies, the information will be more readily accessible to the majority who make use of it. The contents of this book are only accessible to the student who has a thorough knowledge of the traditional categories of grammar; this is after all the only classification that is international enough to give the work currency wherever it may be used in the world.

Countries with mother-tongues other than English, in particular Germany, now have numerous tertiary institutions teaching Dutch and they suffer from an even greater lack of suitable texts for learning the language. Although my approach has been entirely from the point of view of a native-speaker of English, I feel and hope that most of the material will be of equal validity for native-speakers of other languages, and that this book might find currency in those countries until such time as a similar work appears in those languages. The wide-spread knowledge of English among European youth these days should facilitate access to the information contained in the book.

It will be noticed that each new section of grammar gives the Dutch name for that particular grammatical category. My motivation was the following: if one of the functions of this book is to bridge the gap between the existing beginners' grammars and the reference grammars for native-speakers, the student needs to know what the concept is called in Dutch in order to be able to go directly to the relevant section of such works.

The many examples used throughout the book to illustrate the grammatical points
have purposely been kept as simple and everyday as possible, so much so that at times translation did not seem to be necessary.

Although the categories used are, on the whole, internationally recognised, there are inevitably some idiosyncrasies in my classifications, for example possessive adjectives will be found under pronouns and proper nouns appear in an appendix rather than in the chapter on nouns. For this reason I advise the reader to fully acquaint himself with the system by firstly paging through the entire book. Then, with the aid of the contents and the index, he should have little trouble in being able to refer quickly to any point of grammar.

I feel at this point a word of explanation is necessary about the numerous lists in the book. Some readers may feel that some of these lists are simply duplicating the dictionaries, but, having attempted to weed much of the information from dictionaries to compile these lists, I can assure them that the dictionaries are usually inadequate. For example, no Dutch reference work gives a satisfactory list of countries and nationalities and the Dutch themselves simply do not know, or are not sure, what an inhabitant of Zaire is called, to mention but one instance. Many hours of frustrating interviewing and collating of varying opinions went into the compilation of that list alone.

Other lists contain information that is indeed to be found in dictionaries, but not of course in this format. For example, the adverbial expressions of time will nearly all be found as separate entries in any dictionary, but by attempting to bring them all together and listing them under key words, the student will learn so much more about the formation of such expressions by looking them up in this grammar than he will by seeking them in a dictionary.

Other lists are not intended so much for reference as for trying to illustrate certain concepts in Dutch. For example, prepositions could have been tackled in two ways: either I could have taken English prepositions one by one and illustrated the various ways they are rendered in Dutch, but this would in my opinion, have been unwieldy and of little practical use; or alternatively I could have taken and did indeed take Dutch prepositions one by one and listed as many everyday idiomatic uses of each I could think of. In this way I hope the student, while not being able to use the list for reference exactly, will however be able to acquire a feeling for the usage of each of these idiomatic little words.

My treatment of all non-regular verbs also requires a little explanation. I have classified all such verbs as either strong, mixed, modal or irregular. For facility’s sake and to assist the student with an historical linguistic background, strong verbs have all been assigned to the original Ablautreihe to which they belong. On p. 125-127 there is an alphabetical list of very non-regular verb which tells the reader which Ablautreihe or other category the verb belongs to. Then on pages 128-135 the reader can look up the tenses of that verb under the category designated on p. 125-127.

Finally it will be noticed that there is no one chapter devoted to syntax (word-order), for which I expect some criticism. All attempts to formalise the extremely complex issue of word-order that I have seen in Dutch and German grammars fail miserably. I found myself unable to write a chapter on syntax that would be practical for reference and that would not involve unnecessary repetition of issues dealt with elsewhere in the book. For this reason I finally opted for an entry entitled ‘syntax’ in the index which refers the reader to all issues of word-order as and where they occur in the description of the grammar.

Bruce C. Donaldson
University of Melbourne, Dec. 1980

Acknowledgements

My thanks are due to Prof. W.Z. Shetter of Indiana University, Bloomington and Dr. H.C. Wekker of Nijmegen University for their thorough reading of the manuscript and for the many valuable corrections and additions they suggested. I would similarly like to thank a post-graduate student of mine, Ms. J. Bennett, and Ms. R. van Eck from Martinus Nijhoff for their reading of the text.

Thanks are also due to my employer, the University of Melbourne, which provided me with six months study-leave in 1977 during which time a start was made on the writing of this book and without which time the initial ice may never have been broken. In addition the Faculty of Arts at Melbourne University made a considerable sum of money available for typing and assistance with the compilation of the index. This money was gratefully received.

The former secretaries of the Department of Germanic Studies, Mrs. V. Denman and Mrs. A. Heineke-Sieuwerds, must be thanked for the laborious hours they spent typing and retyping the manuscript.

Finally I wish to express my gratitude to Ms. C. McLiesh who, in her capacity as student research assistant, compiled the index, the backbone of any reference work.

B. C. D.

Melbourne, December 1980
Abbreviations

arch. — archaic
c. — common gender
coll. — colloquial
fig. — figurative
lit. — literary

n. — neuter
pej. — pejorative
s.o. — someone
s.t. — something

1 Pronunciation (uitspraak)

It is assumed that anyone using this book is acquainted with the basics of Dutch pronunciation and thus they are not dealt with here. Students requiring detailed information on assimilation, stress and other aspects of pronunciation are advised to consult R.H.B. De Coninck Groot Uitspraakwoordenboek van de Nederlandse Taal, Uitgeverij De Nederlandsche Boekhandel, Antwerpen, 1970.
As with the pronunciation, it is assumed that the reader has grasped the essentials of the highly phonetic spelling of Dutch and that there is no need to repeat them here. In case of doubt on any point, the reader is referred to pages XXXV to LI of Woordenlijst van de Nederlandse Taal — samengesteld in opdracht van de Nederlandse en de Belgische regering, Martinus Nijhoff, 1954.

The following complications of spelling are covered in great detail in the Woordenlijst on the pages given. Only those uses which differ from English and are thus not dealt with in the Woordenlijst are mentioned here.

**Acute and grave accents**

The numerous French loan words written with accents in that language usually retain those accents in Dutch.

*café, à, Française*

Note, however, that diminutives of words ending in -é no longer require the accent.

*café - caffeetje, loge(e) - logeetje*

Words of French origin ending in -ée drop the accent in Dutch:

*orchidee, marsechaussee*

Words beginning with é also drop the accent:

*etage, etalage*

The acute (') and grave (') are otherwise used on Dutch words for emphasis where in an English text we would normally underline the word or print it in bold type. The grave is usually used only on the letter e but is occasionally found on other vowels. The acute also often replaces the grave in such cases; there seems to be little consistency here.

*Een te behoudende koers — A too conservative approach*

*Werklozen en studenten — The unemployed and students or Both the unemployed and students*

*Dit woord wordt gewoonlijk zónder, maar ook wel méét klemtoon gesproken — This word is usually pronounced without, but sometimes with stress*

In the sentence *Je doet het, hé? — You're doing it, aren't you?* the grave reflects the pronunciation and distinguishes the word *hè (niet waar)* from *hé (hey)*.

The acute is used on all other vowels for emphasis. Notice the difference in meaning it gives to the following words:

*een — a, één — one; voor — for, vóór — in front of, before*

Even when these two words have the second meaning they are written with accents only when the meaning could be ambiguous, otherwise they are left off.

*om een uur — at one o'clock*

*eén van mijn vrienden — one of my friends*

*er staat een boom *voor het huis — there is a tree in front of the house*

*er staat een boom *vóór het huis, niet erachter — there is a tree in front of the house, not behind it*

Sometimes the accents are used on other words to avoid ambiguity:

*verstrekkend — far-reaching*

*verstrekkend — issuing, supplying*

**Apostrophe (het weglatingsteken) p. LXVII**

Unlike English, the apostrophe is not used to show possession.

*Jans boek, mijn moeders auto*

Only when the proper noun ends in *a, o, u, s or z* is the apostrophe used:

*Hans' boek, Helma's woordenboek*

The abbreviated forms of *ik, het, mijn, zijn* etc. using an apostrophe are best avoided in writing except in certain standard expressions:

*met z'n drieën, op z'n Nederlands (always abbreviated in these two cases)*

*ik heb 't koud, over 't algemeen (commonly abbreviated)*

**Capital letters (hoofdletters) pp. LXVIII-LXX**

The Dutchman regards the diphthong *ü* as one letter (it is a separate key on a typewriter, for example) and thus if a word starts with *ü* and has to be capitalised, both the *i* and the *e* are affected.

*Het IJ, het IJsselmeer*

In Dutch family names with *van, den* and *der* one usually writes such particles separately and small letters are used when a christian name, initials or title precedes.
When the Christian name, initial or title are not mentioned, a capital letter is used.

When addressing a man directly, meneer precedes his name. If he is being talked about, however, de heer will usually precede his name rather than meneer. This is particularly the case in formal style.

Note that in some avant-garde publications (student newspapers, some modern literature etc.) adjectives of nationality are often written with small letters, e.g. nederlands, amsterdams. The voorkeurspelling, as used in the Woordenlijst, does not support this, however.

Hyphen (het koppelteken) pp. LXIV-LXV

The hyphen is not as common in Dutch as in English because the rules for compound words are on the whole more clearly defined than in English. For example, hesitation about 'kitchen-door' or 'kitchen door', 'racing-car' or 'racing car' does not arise in Dutch, i.e. keukendeur, raceauto etc.

It is, however, commonly used when listing compound nouns that share a component of the compound.

maag-, hoofd-en kiespijn — stomach, head and tooth-ache
voor- en namiddag — morning and afternoon
matrozenuitdrukkingen en -vloeken — seamen's expressions and curses

Diaeresis (het deelteken, de trema) p. LXVI

Syllabic division (verdeling van woorden in lettergrepen) pp. LII-LV

New trends in spelling

Nowadays many foreign words are being written according to the rules of Dutch phonetics:

cadeau — kado/kadootje
niveau — nivo
historisch — histories

Until such time as the Woordenlijst has been revised and gives the seal of approval to such spellings one is advised to follow the voorkeurspelling, i.e. the traditional spelling as recommended in the Woordenlijst.

Medial sounds in compounds words (tussenklanken in samenstellingen) pp. LVI-LXIII

i.e. kippevel, kippenhok, kinderzegel, broekspijp
3 Punctuation (interpunctie, leestekens)

Generally speaking Dutch punctuation does not differ greatly from that of English. Only the comma is used somewhat differently -- usually more sparingly than in English -- and thus only the comma is dealt with here. For a complete account of Dutch punctuation see H.M. Hermkens, *Spelling en Interpunctie*, Malmberg, Den Bosch.

The Comma (de komma)

Only those uses that differ from English are dealt with here.

3.1 It may be used between two adjectives before a noun when no conjunction is used (see p. 91), as in English, but it is also often omitted in such cases; it is, however, always used when three or more adjectives precede the noun.

\[ \text{een koude[,] natte avond} \]
\[ \text{but} \]
\[ \text{een koude, natte en stormachtige avond} \]

3.2 When a subordinate clause precedes a main clause in a compound sentence, a comma is usually used to separate the verbs:

\[ \text{Als je het morgen doet, krijg je iets van me} \]
\[ \text{Omdat hij zo laat thuisgekomen was, was zijn vrouw boos op hem} \]
\[ \text{Ik blijf thuis en omdat ik me misselijk voel, ga ik onmiddellijk naar bed} \]

When the main clause precedes a subordinate clause introduced by *dat*, the comma is often omitted; with other conjunctions the comma is always used.

\[ \text{Ik geloof dat hij morgen komt} \]
\[ \text{Ik heb de pan aan mijn moeder gegeven, hoewel ik er zelf geen had} \]

3.3 With relative clauses a comma is always used at the end of the clause but seldom before it (although it is sometimes found with longer relative clauses).

\[ \text{De man die in dat huis woont, is mijn oom} \]
\[ \text{De universiteit[,] die later in het jaar een aantal nieuwe cursussen graag had willen invoeren, heeft besloten dat dat niet meer mogelijk zal zijn} \]

The following subtle difference in meaning when the first comma is omitted or used should be noted: with a comma the relative clause relates back to the entire group whereas without a comma it relates back to only a section of the group.

\[ \text{Die jongens die te laat waren, moesten schoolblijven} \]
\[ \text{i.e. There were other boys and perhaps girls who were not late.} \]
\[ \text{De jongens, die te laat waren, moesten schoolblijven} \]
\[ \text{i.e. There were only boys and all had to stay behind.} \]

3.4 Note that the following English commas which merely indicate a reading pause within a clause are not used in Dutch:

\[ \text{It is, however, very difficult} \]
\[ \text{Het is echter erg moeilijk} \]
\[ \text{He has, unfortunately, not done it} \]
\[ \text{Hij heeft het helaas niet gedaan} \]

3.5 See p. 223 (footnote) and 229.
Cases (naamvallen)

Case, once so prevalent in Dutch — especially in the written language — is to all intents and purposes dead nowadays. Remnants of the cases will still be found chiefly in standard expressions, official titles and occasionally in very formal writing. Articles, demonstratives, possessives, adjectives and nouns can all be affected by case (see the relevant chapters).

It is traditional in English-speaking countries to refer to the four cases in the following order: nominative (subject case), accusative (direct object case), genitive (possessive case) and dative (indirect object). In Holland, however, the classical order used in the learning of Latin and Greek is more common, i.e. nominative, genitive, dative and accusative. This has resulted in the Dutch naming the cases after their number in the above sequence, i.e. nominative — de eerste naamval, genitive — de tweede naamval etc.

Some common expressions preserving archaic case endings are given below to illustrate the concept; the number is actually infinite. Only the genitive and the dative, apart from the nominative of course, are recognisable nowadays:

Expressions preserving the genitive:

wiens hoed, wier jurk
's middags
blootshoofds
desnoods
het teken des kruises
's lands wijs, 's lands eer
het Leger des Heils
in naam der wet
Ambassade der Nederlanden

whose hat, whose dress
in the afternoon
bare-headed
in case of need
the sign of the cross
when in Rome, ...
the Salvation Army
in the name of the law
Embassy of the Netherlands

Expressions preserving the dative:

ter wille van (see p. 218)
ten einde raad
ten slotte
op heter daad
op den duur
van ganzer harte
om den broede

for the sake of
at one's wits' end
finally
red-handed
in the long run
from the bottom of one's heart
for a living

Articles (lidwoorden)

The indefinite article (het onbepaald lidwoord)

The indefinite article 'a, an' in English is een in Dutch which is pronounced 'a' and sometimes written as such in direct speech. The numeral 'one' is also een, pronounced with a long e and written één when ambiguity can arise (see p. 15 and p. 223). Occasionally in standard expressions and archaic style older case forms of een are found.

enerzijds — on the one hand
het leed en moeder — the sorrow of a mother

Omission of the indefinite article

The indefinite article is sometimes omitted in Dutch where it is used in English.

a it is often omitted after the preposition als (see p. 197):

Hij gebruikt zijn schoteltje als asbak
He's using his saucer as an ashtray
Ik doe Duits als bijvak
I'm doing German as a secondary subject.

b it is commonly omitted after the preposition zonder:

Ik zag een man zonder hoofd
I saw a man without a head
Hij ging uit zonder hoed
He went out without a hat

c it is usually omitted before professions, but always inserted when the profession is preceded by an adjective (when the verb is zijn, worden or blijven).

Ik ben leraar — I am a teacher
Ik ben een zeer goede leraar — I am a very good teacher

d it is commonly omitted before nationalities, but always inserted when the nationality is preceded by an adjective (when the verb is zijn, worden or blijven).

Hij is (een) Nederlandse — He is a Dutchman
Hij is een rasechte Nederlandse — He is a genuine Dutchman
The definite article (het bepaald lidwoord)

The definite article used before singular common gender nouns is *de* and *het* is used before singular neuter nouns. Both genders employ *de* in the plural.

*de man, de deur, het kind, het gat — de mannen, de deuren, de kinderen, de gaten*

There are many remnants of former cases in the definite article (see p. 218). The most common are *der* (genitive singular feminine and plural), *des* or *'s* (genitive masculine and neuter singular) and *den* (dative masculine and neuter singular). Many case forms of the definite article have been preserved in standard expressions:

- *in de loop der tijd* — in the course of time
- *Beatrix, Koningin der Nederlanden* — Beatrix, Queen of the Netherlands
- *'s morgens* — in the morning
- *in naam des konings* — in the name of the king
- *het Leger des Heils* — the Salvation Army
- *op den duur* — in the course of time

The genitive feminine singular and plural *der* in particular is still productive; it is, however, rather formal.

Omission of the definite article

In certain idioms the definite article is omitted where it is used in English:

- *aan tafel* — at the table
- *op tafel* — on the table
- *op kantoor* — at the office
- *naar kantoor* — to the office
- *op straat* — in the street
- *op zolder* — in the attic
- *in bad* — in the bath
- *in huis* — in the house
- *naar zee* — to the seaside
- *aan zee* — at the seaside
- *piano/gitaar/enz. spelen* — to play the piano/guitar etc.

- *ik ben van mening dat* — I am of the opinion that
- *in naam van de koning* — in the name of the king

It is also commonly omitted before nouns in apposition

*Beatrix, Koningin van de V.S., is op het ogenblik op staatsbezoek in Japan*

Inclusion of the definite article

There are many more cases in which the definite article is used where it is not in English. Some cases are situations where its use can be defined, others are individual idioms.

a. it is always used before certain abstract nouns.

- *de mens* — mankind
- *de natuur* — nature
- *de liefde* — love
- *de moderne kunst* — modern art
- *de (Nederlandse) geschiedenis* — (Dutch) history
- *de dood* — death
- *het leven* — life

*De natuur is mysterieus*

Nature is mysterious

*De belangrijkste gebeurtenis in de geschiedenis*

The most important event in history

*Zo is het leven*

Such is life

b. it is always used before names of towns and countries when they are preceded by adjectives.

- *het mooie Amsterdam* — beautiful Amsterdam
- *het toenmalige Duitsland* — Germany in those days

c. it is always used before seasons.

- *in de lente* — in spring
- *De winter in Australië is erg zacht*

Winter in Australia is very mild

D. it is always used with meals after the prepositions *na* and *vóór.

- *na/vóór het avondeten* — after/ before dinner

**But:** *Wat heb je voor ontbijt gehad?*

What did you have for breakfast?
e it is always used before the names of streets, parks and squares.

Ik woon in de Hoofdstraat.
I live in Main Street.
Hij woont op de Erasmusweg.
He lives in Erasmus Road.
Ze sliep in het Vondelpark.
She slept in Vondel Park.
Op het Waterlooplein.
At Waterloo Square.

f religions and names of airlines are always preceded by the definite article.

Hij vloog met de KLM
He flew with KLM
Waar is het hoofdkantoor van de TWA?
Where is TWA’s main office?
De Islam is een godsdienst uit het Midden-Oosten
Islam is a Middle Eastern religion
Het Christendom door de eeuwen heen
Christianity through the ages.

i In Dutch it is not possible for one definite article to do service for two nouns that follow; the article should be repeated for each noun

om de hals en de handen — around the neck and hands
de melk en het brood waren duur — the milk and bread were expensive

j it is used after Meneer and Mevrouw when the profession (not the personal name) follows — usually a form of direct address.

Meneer de Voorzitter — Mr. Chairman
Mevrouw de Presidente — Madame President
Meneer de Kat — Mr. Cat (in a fairy-tale)
Sprookjes van Moeder de Gans — Fairy-tales of Mother Goose

h it is used in various idioms.

in de stad — in town
naar de stad — to town
in de kerk — in church
in de gevangenis — in jail
aan de universiteit — at university
in de praktijk — in practice
onder de zeepgeel — under sea level
in het Duits — in German
uit het Frans vertalen — to translate from French
op het tweede net — on channel two (T.V.)
de school begint om… — school begins at…
in de tweede versnelling — in second gear
tussen de 12 en de 15 — between 12 and 15 (items or age)
over/onder de 50 — over/under 50 (items or age)
voor de lol — for fun
6 Demonstratives (aanwijzende voornaamwoorden)

6.1 The demonstrative, like the definite article, varies according to the gender of the noun it precedes:

common gender:  
de  — this
die  — that

neuter gender:  
dit  — this
dat  — that

plural (both genders):  
de  — these
die  — those

deze man — this man, deze deuren — these doors, die keraar — that teacher, dat huis — that house, die huizen — those houses

Note:  
de  common gender and plural

dezg  neuter singular

die  plural

dat  neuter singular

6.2 Other case forms of the demonstratives are found in standard expressions

een dezen dag — one of these days
op dezer dag — on the 13th of this month (in letters)
dezstijd — at that time
dezriegenzijde — as a result of that

The genitive form diens sometimes replaces the English possessive adjective 'his', see p. 58.

6.3 'The former' and 'the latter' are rendered in Dutch by deze and an archaic demonstrative gene which is also used in other contexts

Wij wonen aan deze zijde van de rivier, onze vrienden aan gene
We live on this side of the river, our friends on that (side)

6.4 The pronominal use of demonstratives is dealt with under pronouns, see p. 59.

7 Nouns (zelfstandige naamwoorden)

Gender (geslacht)

Dutch nouns know only two genders: common gender and neuter. The former is an amalgamation of what was formerly masculine and feminine. Only in some archaic case forms is any distinction between the two still made (see Definite article p. 22). In the south of Holland and in Belgium the difference between masculine and feminine is still heeded in the use of pronouns (see p. 54).

Dutch dictionaries usually indicate gender by placing an m (mannelijk), a v (vrouwe-lijk) or an o (onzijdig) after the noun.

Every new Dutch noun must be learnt together with the appropriate definite article. There are a few reasonably reliable rules for learning the gender of nouns but there are nevertheless many words which do not fit the rules and for which the gender simply has to be learnt by heart. The following is a list of rules, some hard and fast, others a little vague, to assist in learning genders.

7.1 Rules for the gender of Dutch nouns

7.1.1 COMMON GENDER NOUNS

The names of men and women:

de burgemeester (mayor), de dochter (daughter), de moeder (mother), de penningmeesteres (female treasurer), de vader (father), de verpleger (male nurse), de verpleegster (nurse), de zoon (son).

Exceptions: het mens (woman), het wijf (woman). Both are pejorative terms.

The names of most animals, including birds and fish:

de haring (herring), de leeuw (lion), de mus (sparrow).

(for exceptions see Neuter nouns, names of young animals)

The names of trees, flowers and fruit:

de anjer (carnation), de el (oak), de perzik (peach)
The names of stones, considered as objects (see Neuter nouns, minerals):

- de baksteen (brick), de diamant (diamond), de robijn (ruby)

The names of days, months and seasons (except compounds with jaar)

The names of mountains and large rivers:

- de Mont Blanc, de Nijl (Nile), de Rijn (Rhine), de Vesuvius

The names of objects whose names end in -aard, -aar, -erd:

- de standaard (standard), de lessenaar (desk), de mosterd (mustard)

The names of tools or instruments, derived from verbs, and ending in -el and -er:

- de beitel (chisel), de sleutel (key), de gieter (watering-can)

Words ending in -em, -im and -rm:

- de bezem (broom), de helm (helmet), de term (term), de storm (storm)
  Exception: het scherm (screen)

Words ending in -ing and -ling:

- de regering (government), de leerling (school student)

Most monosyllabic words derived from verbs:

- de lach (laugh), de loop (walk, gait), de val (trap, fall), de zucht (sigh)

The names of letters of the alphabet:

- de a, de b, de c

The names of figures (numerical symbols):

- de een, de zeven, de honderd

The names of musical instruments:

- de hobo (oboe), de piano (piano), de viool (violin)
  Exceptions: het spinet, het clavecimbel

The names of virtues and vices:

- de nijd (anger, envy), de woede (rage), de genade (mercy), de liefde (love)

Words with the suffix -e:

- de kou(de) (cold), de vrede (peace), de zonde (sin)
  Exception: het einde (end)

Words derived from adjectives, and with the suffix -te:

- de duurte (expensiveness), de hoogte (height), de lengte (length)

Words ending in -heid and -nis:

- de vrijheid (freedom), de waarheid (truth), de gebeurtenis (event), de geschiedenis (history)

Words ending in -age, -ei, -ie, -teit and -theek:

- de plantage (plantation), de batterij (battery), de pastei (pie), de harmonie (harmony), de fabriek (factory), de electriciteit (electricity), de bibliothek (library)
  Exceptions: het publiek (public), het schilderij (painting)

Words ending in an unaccented -(t)ie and -uw:

  Exceptions: het concilie (council), het evangelie (gospel), het genie (genius)

Adjectives used as nouns and referring to a person:

- de rijke (rich one), de verminkte (crippled one), de zieke (sick one)

Words ending in -schap signifying a condition (see Neuter nouns, -schap):

- de dronkenschap (drunkenness), de verwantschap (relationship), de vriendschap (friendship), de zwangerschap (pregnancy)

But also the following:

- de boodschap (message), de broederschap (brotherhood), de eigenschap (quality), de nalatenschap (inheritance), de wetenschap (science)
NEUTER NOUNS

All diminutives:
- *het kindje* (child), *het koekje* (biscuit)

All infinitives used as nouns:
- *het eten* (food, eating), *het geven* (giving), *het werken* (working)

The names of young animals (except *de big* — piglet)
- *het kalf* (calf), *het kuiken* (chicken), *het veulen* (foal)

A great number of minerals. This group includes
a) Stones, where the name denotes the matter in general, or is a collective noun (see Common gender nouns, names of stones)
   - *het diamant* (diamond), *het steen* (stone), *het kwarts* (quartz)

b) All well-known metals

c) Other minerals
   - *het asbest* (asbestos), *het barium* (barium), *het erts* (ore), *het gips* (gypsum, plaster)
   - *het hoorn* (horn)

The names of countries and provinces (the article is only used when the name is qualified):
- *het mooie Australië*, *het Belgïe van toen*, *het oude Friesland*

The names of cities and villages (including those which have *den* included in the name):
- *het fraaie Den Haag*, *het mooie Amsterdam* (although *de Dam*)

Words ending in *-sel* (except nouns whose *-sel* is not a true suffix, e.g. *de mossel* — mussel, *oksels* — armpit, *wissel* — postal note):
- *deksel* (lid), *stekel* (system), *verschijnsel* (phenomenon), *voedsel* (food)

Only collective nouns with the prefix *ge*- and suffix *-te*:
- *het gebergte* (mountain range), *het gebladerte* (foliage), *het geboomte* (trees)

Collective nouns with *f* prefix ge- and no suffix:
- *het gebroed* (brood), *het gepeupel* (populace, rabble)

Nouns formed from verbal stems beginning with the prefixes *be-, ge-, ont-, ver*-:
- *het belang* (importance), *het gesprek* (conversation), *het ontbijt* (breakfast), *het verbod* (prohibition)
   - Exceptions: *de verkoop* (sale), *de uitverkoop* (sale), *de verhuur* (hiring out)

Adjectives ending in *-e* used as abstract nouns:
- *het goede* (that which is good)
- *het kwade* (that which is evil)
- *het genotene* (that which has been enjoyed)

All colours:
- *het blauw* (blue), *het groen* (green)

All words ending in *-um*:
- *het album* (album), *het gymnasion* (grammar school)
   - Exception: *de datum* (date)

Most words ending in *-dom*:
- *het eigendom* (property), *het Christendom* (Christianity), *het mensdom* (humanity)
   - Exceptions: *de adeldom* (nobility), *de ouderdom* (old age), *de rijkdom* (riches, wealth)

Words ending in *-schap* signifying a function (see Common gender nouns):
- *het priesterschap* (priesthood), *het burgemeesterschap* (mayoralty), *het vaderschap* (fatherhood)
   - but also the following:
     - *het graafschap* (county), *het gezelschap* (company), *het gereedschap* (tools),
     - *het landschap* (landscape), *het genootschap* (society)

All words ending in *-isme*:
- *het communisme*, *het socialisme*, *het germanisme*
All words ending in -aet:

het internaat (boarding school), het secretariaat (secretariat), het consulaat (consulat), het resultaat (result)

Points of the compass:

het noorden (north), het noordoosten (north-east)

7.1.3 COMPOUND NOUNS

Compound nouns always take the gender of the last noun in the compound:

het ontbijt, de tafel — thus, de ontbijttafel.

The following are exceptions to this rule:

- de blik (glance)
- de draad (wire)
- de hof (court-yard)
- de kant (side)
- de stip (dot, point)
- het stuk (piece)
- het weer (weather)
- het zegel (seal)

het ogenblik (moment)
het prikkeldraad (barbed wire)
het kerkhof (grave-yard)
het vierkant (square)
het tijdstip (point of time, period)
de brandweer (fire-brigade)
de postzegel (stamp)

7.1.4 NOUNS WITH TWO GENDERS

There are many nouns that can have two genders: there are those that have two genders with no difference in meaning and those that do have a difference in meaning.

Nouns with two genders with no difference in meaning, the more common gender is given first (there are more nouns in this category):

- het/de affiche (poster)
- het/de deksel (lid)
- de/het matras (mattress)
- de/het omslag (envelope)

Note: de keer (time) but deze/dit keer

Note the peculiarities of gender in the following expressions:

het been but hij is weer op de been
he is on his legs again (actually an old plural form)
het weer but hij is in de weer
he is up and about, busy
het meer but de Bijlmermeer, de Haarlemmermeer
het hout but de Haarlemmerhout

Nouns with two genders with a difference in meaning:

- de bal (ball)
- de blik (glance)
- de blok (block)
- de doek (cloth, i.e. object)
- de hof (court yard)
- de idee (philosophical idea)
- de jacht (hunting)
- de eerste maal (first time, occasion)
- de mens – man(kind)
- de pad (toad)
- de patroon (patron, sponsor)
- de portier (porter)
- de punt (point, i.e. of a needle)
- de Heilige Schrift (Bible)
- de soort (species)
- de stof (material)
- de veer (feather, spring)

Note that the names of all precious stones have two genders: they are common gender when the noun refers to the individual stones and neuter when it refers to the stone as a material:

desmaragd — the emerald (jewel)
het smaragd — emerald (material)

7.2 Plural of Nouns (meervoudsvorming)

Dutch nouns form their plural by the addition of either -s or -en to the singular, the latter ending being more common. The basic rule for plural formation is always to add -en unless the word belongs to one of the following -s plural categories.

1 In fact this is a corruption of the English word 'steak'
2 Actually of different origin; derived from the verb weren = to avert
7.2.1 -S PLURALS (i.e.: -s or -z)

1. All nouns ending in unstressed -el, -en and -er. This is a very large group, eg. tafels, jongens, spijkers — also boezems.
   Exceptions: aderen (veins), artikelen (articles), christenen (Christians), engelen (angels), maatregelen (measures), middelen (means), massaal (mussels), redenen (reasons), wonderen (wonders).

   Also nouns with the suffix -sel and compounds with -stel, eg. verschijnselen (phenomena), beginstelen (principles); opstellen (essays), toestellen (appliances).

   In older writings and more formal style nouns in this group are often found with an -en ending, eg. appelen, wapenen.

   The following nouns take on a new meaning when given an -en plural:

   - hemelen — heavens
   - hemels — canopies
   - hersenen — brains (organ, food)
   - hersens — brains (food)
   - letteren — literature
   - letters — letters (of the alphabet)
   - middelen — means
   - middels — waists
   - tafelen — tables (lists)
   - tafels — tables (for food)
   - vaderen — fore-fathers
   - vaders — fathers
   - wateren — water ways
   - waters — waters
   - wortelen — carrots
   - wortels — roots, carrots

   Note: Words like wiel (wheel), schoen (shoe) and mier (ant) do not contain -el, -en and -er as endings and thus add -en; similarly modell has a stressed -el ending and goes modellen.

2. Nouns ending in -erd and -aard and designating masculine beings, eg. sufferds (idiots), grijsaards (old men).
   Exceptions: spanjaarden (Spaniards).

3. All diminutives ending in -je,
   eg. koekjes (biscuits), huisjes (houses).
   Note: kindertjes (kiddies), hoendertjes (fowls), kleertjes (clothes) (derived from the plural of the non-diminutive form).

4. Nouns ending in -a, -o and -u (all are of foreign origin),
   eg. firma's (firms), auto's (cars), parasol's (umbrellas).
   The apostrophe is inserted because autos, for example, would be pronounced with a short o; a long o sound can be preserved in a closed syllable only by doubling the letter. The Dutchman finds the spelling automo strange and thus replaces the second o with an apostrophe. Thus it is not necessary in cadeaus, cafés and Hindoes, for example, but it is in baby's and ski's.

5. Many foreign words ending in -e,
   eg. actrices (actresses), dames (ladies), garages, secretaires (secretaries), studentes (female students).
   For Dutch words ending in -e see p. 39.

6. Foreign words ending in unstressed -ie,
   eg. families, petties, provincies, studies.
   In higher style the words in this group are found with -ën,
   eg. de elf provinciën van Nederland.

7. Many loan words (mostly of English and French origin) that are still regarded as foreign words,
   eg. clubs, films, perrons (platforms), restaurants, tanks, telefoons, trottoirs (footpaths).
   Nouns of French origin ending in -eur and -rice belong here too,
   eg. auteurs (authors), automonteurs (mechanics), ingénieurs (engineers), kapiteins (captains), actrices, directrices
   Exception: directuren (also with -s).

8. Foreign words ending in -ier and -oor take -s when referring to people and -en when referring to things,
   eg. kruideniers (grocers), winkeliers (shop-keepers), portiers (doormen), pastoors (R.C. priests); formulieren (forms), scharrelen (hinges), portieren (doors), kantoren (offices).
   Exceptions: officieren (officers), scholieren (school-children).
A few native Dutch words denoting male beings, eg. broers (brothers), bruidegoms (bridegrooms), koks (cooks), maats (mates), ooms (uncles), zoons (sons).

Note: zoons also has a plural zonen which is found in names of firms, eg. van Goor en Zonen.

The military ranks kolonel, korporaal and luitenant also take -s. (All take the stress on the final syllable).

7.2.2 -EN PLURALS (i.e.: -n and -en)

1 When the -en suffix is added to nouns to form the plural the following spelling changes apply:

a) Nouns with ae, ee, oo or ur drop one vowel in the open syllable produced by the suffixing of -en,

maan (moon) → manen, peer (pear) → peren, brood (bread) → broden, muur (wall) → muren.

b) Nouns with long vowels or diphthongs ending in -e change to -z (i.e. voicing of s in intervocalic position),

Chinees (Chinese) → Chinezen, huis (house) → huizen, kies (molar) → kiezen, prijs (price, prize) → prijzen, reis (journey) → reizen, roos (rose) → rozen.

Exceptions: eis (demand) → eisen, kous (stocking) → kousen, kruis (cross) → kruisen or kruizen, paas (Pope) → pausen, Pruys (Prussian) → Pruisen, saas (sauce) → saazen, zeis (scythe) → zeisen.

c) Nouns ending in -ms, -ns and -rs change to -z,

gems (chamois) → gemzen, gans (goose) → ganzen, grens (border) → grenzen, vers (poem, stanza) → versen.

Exceptions: dans (dance) → dansen, kikvors (frog) → kikvoorsen, koers (rate, course) → koersen, krans (wreath) → kransen, lens (lance) → lansen, mars (march) → marsen, mens (person) → mensen, pers (press) → persen, but Pers (Persian) → Persen, prins (prince) → prinsen, tendens (tendency) → tendensen, wals (waltz) → walsen, wens (wish) → wensen.

d) Nouns with long vowels or diphthongs ending in -f change to -v (i.e. voicing of f in intervocalic position),

brief (letter) → brieven, graaf (count) → graven, kloof (gap) → kloven, neef (nephew, male cousin) → neven.

Exceptions: nouns of Greeks origin ending in -graaf, eg. fotografie (photographer) → fotografen, paragraaf → paragrafen.

Also filosoof (philosopher) → filosofen.

e) Nouns ending in -lf and -rf change to -v,

golf (wave) → golven, wolf → wolven, werf (wharf) → werven.

Exception: elf → elfen.

f) Nouns containing a short vowel and ending in a consonant double the consonant to preserve the short vowel,

bok (billy-goat) → bokken, fles (bottle) → flesken, hor (wire-screen) → horen, mus (sparrow) → musken, pot → potten, straf (punishment) → straffen.

Note: The two stressed feminine endings -ei and -en belong here, eg. boerin (farmer’s wife) → boerinnen, lerares (female teacher) → leraren.

g) Nouns ending in -ee add -ën,

orchidee (orchid) → orchideeën, zee (sea) → zeeën.

Exceptions: words still regarded as French: eg. logée (visitor) → logées, soiree (party) → soirees.

Also the Latin word dominee (reverend) → dominees.

2 There is a group of very common nouns that have a short vowel in the singular but a long vowel in the plural, i.e. nouns which one would expect to find under f. above which do not double the consonant and thus cause the vowel to be pronounced long.

Common gender:

dag → day → dagen
god → God → goden
hertog → duke → hertogen
hof → court yard → hoven
oorlog → war → oorlogen
 slag → blow, battle → slagen
staaf → staff → staven
weg → road → wegen

Neuter:

bad → bath → baden
bedrag → amount → bedragen
bevel → order → bevelen
blad → leaf of a book, magazine → bladen

Note: 1 staven is also the plural of staaf (stick)
2 blad (leaf of a tree) becomes bladeren
3 There is a small group of nouns with a short vowel in the singular that both lengthen and change their vowel in the plural,

gelid (joint) – gelederen, lid (member, limb) – leden (members), but ledematen (limbs), schip (ship) – scheepen, smid (smith) – smeden, stad (city) – steden.

4 Nouns ending in -aar usually take -en but are found with -s,

adelaar (eagle) – adelen, ambtenaar (official) – ambtenaren, leraar (teacher) – leraren.

5 Nouns ending in stressed -ie add -en.

melodie (tune) – melodieën, symfonie (symphony) – symfonieën.

Exception: bougie (spark-plug) – bougies.

Those ending in unstressed -ie usually take -s (see -s plurals, point 7.2.1.6) but some are found with -n in higher style.

provinciën, koloniën, studiën (compare melodieën etc.).
financiën (finances) always takes -n.

6 Foreign nouns ending in -or usually take -en with a change in stress to the penultimate syllable,

professor – professoren, lector (lecturer, reader) – lectoren, motor – motoren (motors, engines, but motors means motorcycles), organisator – organisatoren.

The spelling doctor is used for the academic title and has a plural doctoren or doctores; the physician is usually spelt dokter and has a plural in -s.

7 Nouns ending in -e cause difficulty: there are those that always take -s (see -s plurals, point 7.2.1.5); there are a few that always take -n,

secunde (second), echtgenote (female spouse);

there are also those that take either, both endings being very common – this is particularly the case for nouns formed from adjectives by the addition of -te,

ziekte (sickness, disease), hoogte (height), vlakte (plain); type (type).

8 Many Dutch nouns that originally ended in -de in the singular (and still do in formal style) add -n to the -de in the plural,

bladzijde (page) – bladzijden, la(de) (drawer) – laden, tree (step) – treden.

9 The nouns koe (cow) and vlo (flea) insert an -i- before -en,

koeten, vlooiën (colloquially one also hears vlooi in the singular).

10 Nouns (usually abstracts) ending in -heid (i.e. -ness) form their plural in -heden,

moeilijkheid (difficulty) – moeilijkheden, schoonheid (beauty) – schoonheden.

7.2.3 -EREN PLURALS

There is a small group of neuter nouns that preserve an old plural ending in -eren (compare Eng. children):

been (bone) – beenderen
blad (leaf) – bladeren
ei (egg) – eieren
gelid (joint) – gelederen

5 been (leg) becomes benen.
6 blad (leaf of a book, magazine) becomes bladen.
7 See -en plurals, point 7.2.2.3.
7.2.5 English plurals which are singular in Dutch

The following nouns are singular in Dutch and are followed by a verb in the singular when one item is referred to; those with an asterisk can of course be used in the plural when more than one item is referred to.

- ashes — de as
- binoculars — de verrekijker*
- economics — de economie
- holidays — de vakantie*
- the Netherlands — Nederland
- glasses — de bril*
- tongs — de tang*
- vegetables — de groente*

7.3 Feminising masculine agents

Dutch has a variety of endings used to denote the female of certain professions, nationalities and animals. There are actually very few rules for their use and on the whole one can best simply learn the feminine equivalents by heart. The following will, however, serve to illustrate the endings in question.

7.3.1 -e:

a) This ending is commonly used with foreign words with a stressed ending.
   - studente, docente, sociolooge (plural in -n or -s)
   - telefoniste (plural in -n or -s), typiste (plural in -s or -n)

b) Also indigenous words ending in -genoot (plural in -n or -s)
   - echtgenote, tijdgenote

7.3.2 -es (stressed):

(plural in -sen)
   - lerares, onderwijzeres, zangeres, barones, prinses
7.3.3 -esse (stressed):  
This ending is used to feminise masculine professions ending in -aris (plural in -s)  

secretaresse, bibliothekaresse

7.3.4 -euse (stressed):  
This ending is only found in words of French origin of which the masculine ends in -eur (plural in -s).  

ouvreuse, masseuse

7.3.5 -in (stressed):  
a Just a few nationalities take this ending (plural in -nen).  

Friezin, Jodin, Russin  
b A few animals take this ending (plural in -nen).  

berin, leeuwin, wolvin  
c Several other nouns (plural in -nen).  

gravin, keizerin, koningin, vorstin; boerin, kokkin, godin, vriendin, negerin

7.3.6 -ster:  
a Nouns derived from verb stems take this ending (plural in -s).  

kapster, schrijfster, toneelspeelster, verkoopster, verpleegster, Werkster  
b Nouns ending in -stander and -zanger take this ending (plural in -s).  

voorstander, voorganger

7.3.7 -trice:  
Nouns of French origin ending in -teur take this ending (plural in -s).  

actrice, directrice

Note: Some nouns of Latin origin ending in -us formerly took an -a ending to denote the female; nowadays, however, the masculine form is usually used (plural in -i, former plural of feminine forms in -a was -ae or -ai).  

musicus (formerly musica), neerlandicus (formerly neerlandica)  
The -a ending is still used occasionally.

7.4 Possession  
The English possessive 's' is known to Dutch also but is not used as extensively in Dutch. Generally speaking it is only commonly used after proper nouns:  

Annekes boek, Vaders auto.

Close relatives preceded by a possessive can employ this s too:  

mijn moeders keuken, zijn broers brommer

All other nouns can better employ a van construction, however:  

de auto van mijn oom, de hoofdstad van Frankrijk

Note: a friend of my brother's – een vriend van mijn broer
The above is a safe guide to correct spoken and written forms; in practice, however, the s forms are commonly heard in instances not recommended here.

The apostrophe is only used to denote possession when the proper noun ends in a vowel, s or z:  

Otto's boek, Rubens'schilderijen, Liz'fiets.

Colloquially one will often hear Hans z'n vriend, mijn oom z'n auto, Anneked'r vriend (see p. 59).

7.5 Diminutives (verkleinwoorden)  
The diminutive is used extensively in Dutch with many connotations of meaning. The mechanics of diminutising a noun are dealt with here first and then the semantic implications of the diminutive. The various forms of the diminutive are a question of phonetics.

7.5.1 FORMATION  
je  
The basic form is the addition of -je to the end of the noun:  

aap - aapje  
boek - boekje  
boer - boerje  
formuis - formuije  
hand - handje  
muizen - muizenje  
muur - muurtje

-tje  
a Words containing a long vowel or diphthong, either final or followed by l, n or r add -tje to the noun:  

ei - eitje  
ui - uitje  
vrouw - vrouwtje

b Words ending in -el, -en and -er also take -tje:  

tafel - tafeltje  
deken - dekentje  
tafel - tafeltje  

11 /s/ is pronounced (f)
Three nouns in this category have two forms:

- *dag* (pl. *dagen*) → *dagje, daagjes*
- *lot* (pl. *loren*) → *lotje, lootje*
- *rad* (pl. *raderen*) → *radje, raadje* (also: *radertje*)

The nouns *kind* and *kleren* (a plural) have a special form:

- *kindje* → little child (can also take a plural -s)
- *kindertjes* → little children (always plural)
- *kleertjes* → little clothes (always plural)

-kje

Nouns ending in *-ing* change the g to k before adding -je; nouns ending in *-ling*, however, take -etje:

- *konj* → *koninkje*
- *regering* → *regerinkje*

-kje

- *wangeling* → *wandelingetje*
- *leerling* → *leerlingetje*
- *tekening* → *tekeningetje*

Spelling peculiarities

Nouns ending in long vowels (i.e. an open syllable) need to double the vowel when the diminutive ending is added (i.e. making a closed syllable) to preserve the long sound:

- *paraplu* → *parapluutje*
- *café* → *cafeetje*
- *Margot* → *Margootje*

Variant forms of the diminutive

In the west of the Netherlands a colloquial variant of the diminutive exists which is sometimes also used in cultured speech for humorous effect; the ending is -tje, eg. *huisie, jochie, koekje, lichtje* (from *licht*), *meisje*.

---

12 *patje* = backside
13 *padje* = little toad
14 't' not pronounced
In the south of the Netherlands and in Belgium the -je form is often colloquially replaced by -ke, with phonetic variants -ske and -pke:

\[\text{huiske, meiske, slakske,boomke}\]

This ending is common in female christian names, even in the north:

\[\text{Anneke, Aafke}\]

An archaic variant often found in names and titles is -ken:

\[\text{Manneken Pis, Duyfken}\]

7.5.2 SEMANTIC IMPLICATIONS OF THE DIMINUTIVE

It is particularly the nuances of meaning expressed by the diminutive which make it so peculiarly unique in Dutch but also so difficult for non-native speakers to master. The following can only serve as a guide to its main uses; its potential is infinite as it is very much a productive ending and is not restricted to nouns (see p. 48). On the whole the connotation of a diminutive form is a positive one, but sometimes it fulfils a derogatory function (see point 6).

1 The diminutive's basic function is to make things small.

\[\text{huis} - \text{house; huisje} - \text{little house, cottage}\]

\[\text{Roodkapje} - \text{Little Red Riding Hood}\]

Even with this meaning, however, the diminutive is commonly preceded by the adjective klein.

\[\text{De kat zit onder een klein struikje.}\]

\[\text{The cat is sitting under a little shrub.}\]

\[\text{Hij woont op een heel klein kamertje.}\]

\[\text{He's living in a teeny weeny room.}\]

2 The diminutive is also used as a form of endearment; Christian names (and not just of children but particularly women's names) are often diminutised, e.g. Jantje, Frankie;

\[\text{Mijn broertje heeft er een.}\]

\[\text{My younger brother has one.}\]

The diminutive forms of man and wijf are used for male and female with reference to animals.

\[\text{Is het een mannetje of wijfje?}\]

\[\text{Is it a male or female?}\]

\[\text{Het is een wijfjesap, geen mannetjesap}\]

\[\text{It is a female monkey, not a male monkey}\]

The latter forms are used chiefly for animals for which there is no separate word for male and female.

4 The diminutive is used to itemise some quantitative nouns, i.e. nouns that stand for a collective quantity (particularly varieties of food and drink) take on the meaning of one item of that quantity when they bear the diminutive ending:

\[\text{advokaat} - \text{a glass of advokaat}\]

\[\text{bier} - \text{beer}\]

\[\text{chocolade} - \text{chocolate}\]

\[\text{gebak} - \text{pastry}\]

\[\text{hout} - \text{wood}\]

\[\text{iets} - \text{an icecream}\]

\[\text{koek} - \text{a biscuit}\]

\[\text{kruid} - \text{chuck}\]

\[\text{liefje} - \text{a piece of liquor}\]

\[\text{muziek} - \text{music}\]

\[\text{nootjes} - \text{a piece of music (coll.)}\]

\[\text{worsst} - \text{sausage}\]

These endings can have other connotations, however:

\[\text{een lekker wijntje} - \text{a very nice wine (not a glass of wine)}\]

5 A few nouns only exist as diminutives:

\[\text{meisje} - \text{girl (formerly from meid)}\]

\[\text{lachertje} - \text{ridiculous suggestion, situation etc.}\]

\[\text{dubbeltje} - \text{10 cents}\]

\[\text{kwartje} - \text{25 cents}\]

\[\text{op het nippertje} - \text{in the nick of time}\]
The following children's games always contain the diminutive:

- krijgertje spelen - to play tag
- verstoppertje spelen - to play hide and seek
- touwtje springen - to skip

6 Occasionally the diminutive can give a derogatory connotation to a noun:

- burgermannetje - petit bourgeois
- een raar taaltje - a strange lingo
- boertje van buiten\textsuperscript{15} - yokel

7.5.3 DIMINUTIVES OF OTHER PARTS OF SPEECH

It is possible for words other than nouns to take a diminutive ending, thus giving a new connotation to the word concerned or even a completely new meaning.

1 Adverbs are the most notable example of words other than nouns that have this potential; the ending used is -jes (with phonetic variants -tjes and -pjes). Its function is one of toning down the intensity of meaning. In the spoken language it is still productive (see p. 110).

- eventjes - just a minute
- gezelligjes - cosily
- knusjes - cosily
- losjes - loosely
- netjes - neatly
- stilletjes - quietly, secretly
- stiekempjes - secretly
- strakjes - in a moment
- warmpjes - warmly
- zachtjes - quietly, softly

Wij zaten lekker warmjes binnen
We were sitting inside nice and warm
Het is hier erg knusjes, hè?
It is very cozy here, isn't it?

2 Adjectives used as nouns can have a diminutive ending; this form of the adjective is particularly commonly used where we say in English 'a white one', 'a little one' where the 'one' cannot be translated literally:

- een witje, een kleintje
also
- de kleintjes - the little ones (children or things)
- een nieuwitje - a piece of news

3 Numerals can also take the ending in certain expressions. 'On my/your/his own etc.' is always in mijn/jij/zijn eentje. A more familiar form of met z'n tweëen/driëen etc. is met z'n tweejes/drietjes etc.

4 The expressions een ondernisje - 'a tête-à-tête' and ietsje - 'a little' show the diminutive being suffixed to pronouns,

- ik zal je ietsje van vertellen
  I'll tell you a little about it.

The adverb iets (somewhat) can also take it,

- ik ben ietsje moe
  I am somewhat tired.

5 Een moetje - 'a shotgun marriage' is a quaint example of a noun formed from a verbal particle by addition of the diminutive.

6 There are a few expressions derived from prepositions incorporating the diminutive:

- toetje - dessert
- uitje (from uitstapje) - excursion
- een ommetje maken - to go for a short walk
- rondje - round (of drinks)

\textsuperscript{15} A colloquial form of buiten.
8 Pronouns (voornaamwoorden)

8.1 Personal pronouns (persoonlijke voornaamwoorden)

There are two series of personal pronouns: subject and object pronouns. The forms in the right-hand columns are the unemphatic forms; those that are not normally written are given in brackets. Some pronouns do not have unemphatic forms.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>Object</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sing.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. ik¹</td>
<td>mij</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. jij</td>
<td>jou</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. hij²</td>
<td>hem²</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zit²</td>
<td>haar²</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(d'r)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>her²,³</td>
<td>(t)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. wij</td>
<td>ons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. jullie</td>
<td>jullie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. zit³,⁴</td>
<td>ze</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>die</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ze</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

8.1.1 UNEMPHATIC PRONOUNS

The distinction between emphatic and unemphatic pronouns, which also exists in English in the spoken language (but not in the written), is very important in Dutch.

---

1 An extra emphatic form ikk is also exists in the spoken language only, eg. Jij hebt mijn boek gestolen, niet waar? Wat, ikke?

2 Neuter words referring to male or female beings (eg. het jongebeit, het meisje, het wijfje) are usually replaced by masculine or feminine pronouns (see also footnote 8 on p. 58) but can be replaced by neuter pronouns in formal style.

3 Het is also used to translate English 'they'. (see p. 55)

4 In colloquial Dutch hun also occurs as a subject pronoun meaning 'they' but it can only refer to people. This practice, which is becoming very common these days, is better avoided.

5 Colloquially one will often hear ze as the unemphatic object form of haar. It may also be written.

One important difference from English is that many, but not all the unemphatic forms, are written. If no particular stress is required, it is of no consequence whether one writes the emphatic or unemphatic form of the subject pronoun.

Heb je je vrouw gesproken?

or

Heb jij je vrouw gesproken?

Even the latter example can be read aloud substituting orally je for jij.

a The unemphatic form of the possessive zijn is written only in such expressions as met z'n tweeën, op z'n best where it must be used. Also the colloquial forms mijn broer z'n auto and mijn zuster d'r man, if ever written, require the unemphatic form (see p. 59).

b The unemphatic form of jullie can only be used when jullie has already been used as the subject of the sentence; jullie can then be followed by an unemphatic possessive or reflexive form.

Jullie kunnen je onmogelijk vergissen.

Jullie moeten je snoepjes in je zak stoppen.

The unemphatic subject form je can only be used when a previous sentence has indicated that this je stands for jullie and not for jij. In this case a singular verb is used even though je is standing for jullie.

Jullie mogen morgen komen en als je gegeten hebt, kunnen we naar de bioscoop gaan.

It is very common in spoken Dutch to begin a sentence with jullie to indicate that one means you plural and then to continue the conversation with je + singular verb; more than one jullie in a sentence sounds clumsy.

c U is officially both a singular and a plural pronoun. However, often jullie is used as an unemphatic or rather neutral form of plural us. Because us demands a singular verb it is felt to refer to one person and for this reason is often replaced by jullie, but not in contexts where one must mind ones p's and q's with regard to the form of address.

d Unemphatic hij is pronounced ie, usually only when it follows the verb and the -t ending can act as a glide, eg. Heeft-ie dat gedaan?, Vandaag gaat-ie naar huis. The difference between this and the referential die (see die) is often not heard.

Heeft-ie, heeft die.

ie will also be heard after other words ending in -t, eg. Weet ie wat ie vandaag moet doen.
e. Just as in English where the somewhat stilled pronoun ‘one’ is usually substituted with unemphatic ‘you’, so in Dutch men is replaced by je (never jij) in general speech and can also be said in this meaning to people one otherwise says u to. The emphatic form jij can only mean ‘you’, the person one is talking to. Similarly ze can replace men just as in English ‘they’ replaces ‘one’; the difference between je and ze in such contexts is the same as between ‘you’ and ‘they’, i.e. the person being addressed cannot be included in the action.

Men heef gisteren de DDR erkend. Ze hebben gisteren de DDR erkend.
The pronoun we is often used in an impersonal sense too just as in English.

Hier hebben we het Paleis op de Dam.
(see also p. 165)

f. Common in speech but rare in writing is the form ze for unemphatic haar meaning ‘her’. Usually the context will indicate whether ‘her’ or ‘them’ is meant.

8.1.2 REMARKS ON SUBJECT AND OBJECT PRONOUNS

1. Second person forms of address: jij, u, gij, jullie

Anyone who has attempted to learn another language will be acquainted with the existence of two forms of second person address. In the ABN of the northern Netherlands the two forms are jij and u. Broadly speaking one can compare the usage of the two with similar couplings in other languages, i.e. French tu/vous, German du/Sie. In detail, however, usage sometimes differs quite dramatically from those languages.

The verb tutoyeren, borrowed from French, means to be on jij terms:

Hoe goed ken je de directeur? We tutoyeren elkaar al.

The verb jijen is also used.

a. Use of u

In addition to the usual usage of the polite form of address for strangers, elders etc., u is also employed in the following cases where it would not be used in German, for instance.

1. A minority of people, but quite a sizeable one, still say u to their parents. This was very common prior to the War and is still quite commonly found.

2. It is commonly used for grandparents and aunts and uncles.

U/uw are often still written with capital letters in very formal letters, but this tradition is waning.

b. Use of jij

Generally speaking jij is used for friends, relatives (with the above exceptions), children and animals. Its usage differs from that of du in German, for example, in the following ways:

1. Teachers use jij for schoochildren of all ages, but the student must say u to his teachers.

2. Young people of comparable age often call each other jij even if they are unacquainted. University students always automatically say jij to each other.

c. Use of gij

In Belgium gij (unemphatic ge) commonly replaces jij but the latter is becoming increasingly popular as the south begins to follow the north more and more in linguistic matters. Dialectally gij is also used in the plural. The object and possessive forms of gij are u and uw respectively.

Note: Historically this form is older than jij and u and for this reason it was the standard written form for centuries, even in the northern Netherlands. It is this form that was used in the seventeenth century state translation of the Bible and thus, if it is used in the North at all nowadays, it usually has a biblical connotation. Gij has the same ring about it to the Dutchman as ‘thou’ to the Englishman. Gij often has its own specific form of the verb: ge gijt, ge waart, ge zoadt.

d. Use of jullie

For the use of jullie as the plural of u see p. 51. The origin of this form is je(e)den (i.e. you people) and is often found as jelui in some older literary works.

2. The object pronouns hen and hun (see ‘Woordenlijst’, p. XVIII)

Historically there is no distinction between hen and hun. The two were originally simply phonetic variants of the one word. The distinction is an artificial one imposed upon the language by eighteenth century philologists. The artificiality of the distinction is reflected in Dutch speech today where hardly anybody uses the two according to the rules prescribed. It should be noted, however, that the Dutchman always uses hun where grammar strictly speaking demands hen, a form which is actually seldom used in the spoken language. In writing, one should attempt to use them correctly. The rule is:

hen is the direct object and is also used after prepositions.

hun is the indirect object, the only personal pronoun to have a separate dative form.

Ik heb hen gisteren in de stad gezien.
Toen heb ik de informatie aan hen gegeven.
but

Ik heb hun de informatie gegeven.

The distinction is similar to the following in English:

I gave them the information. (aan hen)
I gave them the information. (hun)

One is well advised in all the above cases to use ze if one is in doubt, but ze can of course be used as an unemphatic pronoun only.

Ik heb de informatie aan ze gegeven.
Ik heb ze de informatie gegeven.

It is particularly difficult to distinguish whether hen or hun is required in cases like the following:

Wij wensten hun geluk.
Het lukte hun de top van de berg te bereiken.
Ik beloofde hun dat ik zou komen.
Ik heb het hun beloofd.
Ik zei hun dat ik morgen zou komen.

In all these cases hun is used because the indirect object is required; this is clearly illustrated by the last two examples where the sentence can be rephrased with prepositions:

i.e. Ik heb het aan hen beloofd.
Ik zei tegen hen dat ik morgen zou komen.

3 'it' as a subject pronoun (see Woordenlijst - geslacht en voornaamwoordelijke aan- duiding p. IX-XIX)

a It should be noted that singular common gender nouns (whether persons or things) are regarded as being masculine when a pronoun replaces them:

Die stoel heb ik gisteren gekocht. Hij is erg mooi, vind je niet?

b In Belgium the old distinction between masculine and feminine is still very much alive.

Doe de deur dicht. Nee, zij blijft open.

In Holland abstract nouns are replaced in formal style by zij, but in colloquial language hij is often heard.

Abstract common gender nouns ending in:

- -heid waarheid, eenheid etc.
- -ie commissie, politie etc.
- -erij uitgeverij, bakkerij etc.
- -nis kennis, erfenis etc.
- -ing regering, regeling etc.
- -st kunst, winst etc.
- -schap wetenschap, verwantschap etc.
- -de, -te begeerte, liefde etc.

De regering heeft vandaag haar besluiten bekendgemaakt.

Female animals, eg. koe, merrie etc., can be replaced by zij 'but one does commonly hear the Dutch using hij with reference to such animals.

Zie je die kat? Hij heeft net gejongd.

c There is an added complication in the translation of an 'it' referring to common gender nouns. There are instances where an 'it' which one would expect to be hij is in fact het.

The rule is as follows:
As subject of the verb zijn, the pronoun het is used to refer to all nouns and persons (singular and plural) when
a the predicate is a noun
b the predicate is an adjective used as a noun
but not when the predicate is an adjective; then het is used only for singular neutral nouns.

Deze stoel heb ik gisteren gekocht. Het is een heel dure.

but

Deze stoel heb ik gisteren gekocht. Hij was erg duur.

De stem van mijn zuster is erg zacht, maar het is wel een mooie.

but

De stem van mijn zuster is erg zacht, maar hij is wel erg mooi.

Het zijn Duitsers die naast ons wonen.

but

Ze zijn Duits, de mensen die naast ons wonen.

Ik heb twee glazen gebroken. Het waren Italiaanse glazen.

but

Ik heb twee glazen gebroken. Ze waren Italiaans.

6 Note that some nouns ending in -schap are neuter: landschap, lidmaatschap (see p. 29 and p. 31).
d In addition to the cases mentioned under c where an 'it' which one would expect to be *hij* is *het*, there are also other instances where *het* is used instead of *hij* but for which no concrete rules can be given (see also 4, c below). It would seem that the pronoun in such cases refers to an action or state rather than to a noun in the first clause.

Je moet de oostkust bezoeken. Het is (er) prachtig.
Hij liet de auto langs de weg staan, want hij wist dat het daar veilig zou zijn.
(but *hij* if *staan* were used instead of *zijn*)
De boerderij van mijn oom is vlakbij Zwolle. Het is ongeveer een kwartier met de auto van Zwolle vandaan.

4 ‘It’ as an object pronoun

a When an object pronoun ‘it’ refers to a common gender noun, *hem* is used in Dutch, not *het*.

*Ik heb een antieke kast gekocht. Wil je hem zien?*

*Ik kocht een tafel voor mijn moeder maar ze wilde hem niet hebben."

b There are a few instances (see 3, b above) where *haar/ze* are used instead of *hem*.

*Wat heb je met de oude tafel gedaan? Ik heb ze verkocht.* (Southern Dutch)

b On occasions one will hear *het* as an object pronoun where one would expect *hem* (see 3, d above).

*Wat een rare lucht! Nou, ik vind het lekker, (i.e. *Ik vind het lekker ruiken.)*
Er klonk een vlugge stap op de trap, maar zij hoorde het niet, (i.e. *het stappen*)
Ik ga morgen een lesing houden, maar ik weet nog niet of ik het in het Engels of in het Nederlands ga doen.

*Ik heb er mijn geld in gestopt.*

This division of the prepositional object is generally more common in colloquial Dutch than the following:

*Ik heb mijn geld erin gestopt.*

When separate the *er* must go immediately after the finite verb and the preposition to the end of the clause, but before infinitives and past participles.

De studenten hebben er de hele dag aan gedacht.

Negatives precede the preposition:

Wij willen er de bladeren niet in doen.

It should be noted that a form such as *erop* etc. can also be translated by ‘on them’. Whenever ‘them’ preceded by a preposition refers to things, it must be translated in this way.

Here are three knives. Will you peel the oranges with them?

*Hier hebben jullie drie messen. Wil len jullie er de sinaasappels mee schillen?*

For further functions of *er* see p. 236.

5 Die as a referential pronoun

a The demonstrative *die* is very commonly used in Dutch as a substitute for *hij/hem, zij/haar, zij/hen/hun* with varying connotations of meaning. Except in questions the clause always begins with *die*; sometimes it is stressed and thus serves as an emphatic pronoun, and in other cases it acts as an unemphatic pronoun.

*Is Bob er nog niet? Nee, die komt niet. (unstressed) = hij*

*Ik weet het niet maar die weten het wel. (stressed) = zij (they)*

*Heb je Marie gesproken? Nee, die heb ik helemaal niet gezien.*

(stressed or unstressed) = *haar*

*Hebben die dat gedaan? (stressed or unstressed) = *zij (they)*

b It should be noticed that *die* appears in the list of object pronouns on p. 00 as the stressed form of *ze* (them) referring to things: the emphatic forms *hen/hun* can refer only to people and *ze*, which can be used for people or things, is by definition unemphatic; when stressing ‘them’ referring to inanimate objects, one must use *die*.

*Hebben jullie de appels gegeten die ik vanochtend gekocht heb?
Nee, die hebben we niet gegeten.*

b *Die* can also be a handy means of avoiding the difficulties caused by pronominal substitution of *hij/hem* or *het* mentioned under 8.1.2.3, d and 8.1.2.4, c.

*Hij heeft zijn auto aan de kant van de weg laten staan want hij wist dat die daar veilig zou staan.*

(here *die* replaces *hij* which could be ambiguous)

6 English difficulties with subject and object pronouns

a Due to the subject and object forms of ‘you’ being the same in English, confusion as to whether to use *jij* or *jou* in Dutch can arise in instances like the following:

He is bigger than you.

*Hij is groter dan jij.*

I like him more than you.

*Ik vind hem aardiger dan jou.*

If I were you.

*Als ik jou was.*
8.2.1 INFLECTION OF POSSESSIVES

b Because of the confusion in the usage of 'i' and 'me' in colloquial English, a confusion which does not often occur in Dutch, the following mistakes are sometimes made:

He is bigger than me (= I).
Hij is groter dan ik. (never mij)
Robert gave some money to Jan and I (= me).
Robert gaf wat geld aan Jan en mij.

7 The use of 'to' in English before pronominal indirect objects.

Note the use or lack of *aan* in the following examples:

She gave it to the man. Zij gaf het aan de man.
She gave him the book. Zij gaf hem het boek (de man het boek)
She gave it to him Zij gaf het hem
Zij gaf het aan hem.
(when emphasised)

Note: She gave it to them. Zij gaf het hen.
Zij gaf het aan hem.
(when emphasised)

8.2 Possessive pronouns (*bezittelijke voornaamwoorden*)

| mijn | (m'n) |
| jouw | je    |
| uw   |       |
| z'n? | (z'n) |
| haar | (d'r) |
| z'n  |       |
| ons/once |      |
| jullie | je   |
| uw  |       |
| hun? | (d'r) |

7 In formal style *dien* may replace the masculine possessive *zijn* (see p. 26)
De gouverneur-generaal van Nederlands-Indië en diens echtgenote.
The governor-general of the Dutch East Indies and his wife.

8 Neuter words referring to female beings (eg. *het meisje, het wijf*) usually take feminine possessive pronouns but can be replaced by neuter pronouns in formal style.

Het meisje heeft haar grootmoeder lekkere dingen gebracht/ Het meisje heeft zijn grootmoeder bezocht.

9 In formal style *haar* can replace the possessive form *hun* when it refers to a feminine plural.
De dames hebben haar handtassen achtergelaten.

This explains why the unemphatic form of possessive *hun* is *d'r*.

8.2.1 INFLECTION OF POSSESSIVES

a Only *ons* is inflected (i.e. becomes *onze*) before singular common gender nouns and before all plurals,

*onze vriend, onze boeken but ons boek*.

b In very formal style all possessives can take -e before feminine singular nouns and plural nouns.

| Uwe Excellentie | Your Excellency |
| Utrechtse Excellentie | Your Excellency |
| Hare Majesteit | Her Majesty |
| Mijnheer | Dear Sirs |

| een uwer afgevaardigden | one of your representatives |
| miens inziens | in my opinion |
| te zijner tijd | in the course of time |

(feminine dative singular)

8.2.2 COLLOQUIAL POSSESSIVES

Expressions such as *de auto van mijn broer/mijn broers auto, het huis van mijn moeder/mijn moeders huis, de kleren van die mensen, have an alternative form which one often hears but usually avoids in writing

*mijn broer z'n auto*  
mijn moeder d'r huis  
die mensen d'r kleren/die mensen hun kleren

Masculine antecedents use *z'n* (i.e. *zijn*) and *d'r* is used for feminine singular and plural antecedents while *hun* is used for masculine and feminine plural antecedents. (see p. 42)

8.2.3 In conversational style *die z'n* and *die d'r* can replace *zijn* and *haar*.

Die z'n vriend is een vreemd figuur  
His friend is a strange person  
Die d'r man studeert in Leiden  
Her husband is studying in Leiden.

(see also relative pronouns on p. 65-66)
8.2.4 REPLACEMENT OF POSSESSIVES BY REFLEXIVE PRONOUNS

Occasionally the possessive is replaced by a reflexive pronoun or object pronoun where parts of the body are concerned; the part of the body is then preceded by the definite article.

- Hij heeft zich in de vinger gesneden.
- Of
- Hij heeft in zijn vinger gesneden.
- De slang heeft hem in het been gebeten.
- Of
- De slang heeft in zijn been gebeten.

It is not, however, incorrect to use the reflexive and the possessive pronoun together, e.g., Hij heeft zich in zijn vinger gesneden, de slang heeft hem in zijn been gebeten.

8.2.5 INDEPENDENT POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Formal</th>
<th>Usual</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>mine</td>
<td>de/het mijne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yours</td>
<td>de/het jouwe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yours</td>
<td>de/het uwe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>his</td>
<td>de/het zijne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hers</td>
<td>de/het hare</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>its</td>
<td>de/het zijne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ours</td>
<td>de/het onze</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yours</td>
<td>de/het hunne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>theirs</td>
<td>de/het hunne</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- The formal forms can be used in conversation too although de/het hunne sounds particularly stilted.

- Here is my car. Where is yours?
  - Hier staat mijn auto. Waar staat de jouwe?
  - Of
  - Waar staat die van jou?
- Your house is very nice but have you seen mine?
- Jouw huis is erg mooi maar heb je het mijne gezien?
- Or
- Heb je dat van mij gezien?

8.3 Reflexive pronouns (wederkerende voornaamwoorden)

Reflexive pronouns, both with and without verbs, plus the use of zelf and eigen are dealt with under reflexive verbs. (see p. 171)

8.4 Demonstrative pronouns (aanwijzende voornaamwoorden)

8.4.1 The demonstratives deze/dit and die/dat (see p. 26) can also be used pronominally just as 'this/these' and 'that/those' can be in English (usually this one, these ones etc., however).

- Die stoel was duur maar deze was erg goedkoop.
  - That chair was expensive but this one was very cheap.
- Dat (referring to huis) heb ik gisteren gekocht.
  - I bought that (one) yesterday.

8.4.2 There is also a pronominal usage of dit and dat (compare also het p. 55) which differs greatly from English: dit and dat (and het) can be followed by a plural form of zijn and can refer to a plural quantity in which case they replace English 'they, these and those'.

- Dat zijn Duitsers.
  - They are Germans.
- Dat (dit) zijn de enige die ik heb kunnen vinden.
  - Those (these) are the only ones I was able to find.

As with het (see p. 55) dit and dat can only be used in this way if the complement following zijn is a noun or adjective used as a noun, otherwise zij or die are used.
They are very expensive.

They have all gone now.

Independent demonstrative pronouns are not usually preceded by prepositions; *hier* + preposition replaces *dit*, and *daar* + preposition replaces *dat*.

Stop het hierin.
Put it in this.

Ik heb het daarmee (= *daar* + *met*) geschreven.
I wrote it with that.

These forms are also separable.

Daar heb ik het mee geschreven.
I wrote it with that. (emphasised)

The adverbial expressions of time *daarna* (after that, afterwards), *daarop* (after that, thereupon) and *daarvoor* (before that) are not separated.

Kort daarna vertrokken wij.
Shortly after that we left.

Relative pronouns (betrekkelijke voornaamwoorden)

Difficulties with English relatives

English very often omits relative pronouns (actually only when they are objects, never when subject pronouns) but they must always be used in Dutch. In addition there is often a choice of relative in English.

The man I saw yesterday is sick.
The man whom/that/which I saw yesterday is sick.

De man die ik gisteren zag, is ziek.
The person I gave the letter to has left.
The person that/whom I gave the letter to has left.
The person to whom I gave the letter has left.

De persoon aan wie ik de brief gaf, is weg.

Occasionally they are preceded by prepositions when qualified.

Wat wij voorstellen past niet bij dit alles.
What you are suggesting doesn’t fit in with all of this.

Vergeleken met dat van mij...
Compared with mine...

The simple relative in Dutch

*Dit* is the relative pronoun used for common gender nouns in the singular, and for both common gender and neuter nouns in the plural.

*Dat* is used for neuter nouns in the singular.

De man die hier woont, is ziek.
De mannen die hier wonen, zijn ziek.

Het boek dat ik nu lees, is oud.
De boeken die ik nu lees, zijn oud.

Note: 1 *Dit/dat* are pronouns because within their own clause they stand for a noun. In English they are ‘who/which/that’.

2 They are relative because they relate back to the preceding word.

3 The finite verb in relative clauses is sent to the end of that clause.

4 If a comma is used at all, it follows the relative clause. In shorter sentences like the above it can be omitted.

Relative pronouns preceded by prepositions

a When a preposition occurs before a relative pronoun of common gender, the pronoun *wie* is used instead of *die* when it refers to a person.

De man met wie ik in de winkel stond te praten, was mijn oom.

This sentence can be translated as follows:

1 The man with whom I was talking in the shop was my uncle.

2 The man whom I was talking with in the shop was my uncle.

3 The man I was talking with in the shop was my uncle.

In archaic style a dative form *wie* (older *wien*) without a preposition can occur. This form was used until quite recently.

De man wie het gegeven werd, is verdwenen.

The man to whom it was given has disappeared.

b When a preposition is used before a relative pronoun relating to a thing, whether it be a *de* or *het* word, *waar* plus the preposition is used:

De tafel waarop het brood ligt, is van mij.

This can be translated as follows:
1. The table on which the bread is lying is mine.
2. The table which the bread is lying on is mine.
3. The table the bread is lying on is mine.

Note: There is, however, in this instance a second variation in word order in Dutch. This is in fact the more common of the two. In this case the preposition is sent to the end of the relative clause where it is placed before the verb which has also been relegated to the end of the clause.

De tafel waar het brood op ligt, is van mij.

Further examples using a neuter noun and a plural where the construction is precisely the same:
Het brood waar ik van hou, is niet verkrijgbaar. – Neuter noun.
De bedden waar de katten onder slapen, zijn oud. – Plural noun.

c. In conversation it is also common to use the waar + preposition construction referred to in b for people.

De man waarmee (= met wie) ik in de winkel stond te praten, is mijn oom.
or
De man waar ik in de winkel mee stond te praten, is mijn oom.

8.5.4 RELATIVES WITH INDEFINITE ANTECEDENTS – USE OF WAT

niets wat nothing (which/that) you say...
iets wat something (which/that) you say...
veel wat much (of what) you say...
alles wat everything (which/that) you say...
wat dat that which you say ... (see p. 66)
het enige wat, the only thing (which/that) (see p. 71)
het laatste wat the last thing (which/that)

Sometimes the antecedent of wat is an entire clause:
Hij heeft zijn auto total loss gereden, wat ik erg jammer vind.
He wrecked his car, which I think is a great shame.

8.5.5 WORD ORDER IN RELATIVE CLAUSES

Sending the verb to the end of the relative clause sometimes confuses English speakers who are used to the relative immediately following the noun to which it refers. One can keep the antecedent and the relative together in Dutch (note the obligatory comma in such cases), as the following examples illustrate, but that is not usually the case.

a. Ik heb hem het lijstje gestuurd dat je me gegeven hebt.
This word order is preferable to the following although what follows is not incorrect.

Ik heb hem het lijstje dat je me gegeven hebt, gestuurd.

b. Laat me dat hondje eens zien dat je gekocht hebt.
Here the distance between the relative and its antecedent is greater and the speaker may prefer:

Laat me dat hondje dat je gekocht hebt, eens zien.

Either is, however, still possible.

c. Ik kan een kast toch moeilijk afsluiten waar jij de sleutel van hebt.
Here the distance is so great that the following would be preferred:

Ik kan een kast waar jij de sleutel van hebt, toch moeilijk afsluiten.

8.5.6 WHOSE

1

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>wiens</th>
<th>van wie/waarvan</th>
<th>die 'n</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>wier</td>
<td>van wie/waarvan</td>
<td>die d'r</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>welks</td>
<td>waarvan</td>
<td>waarvan</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The forms given in column 1 are only found in the written language, wiens being somewhat more common than wier or welks which are regarded as particularly archaic.

Usually the forms in column 2 replace those in 1 in writing and speech and those in column 3 are restricted to the spoken language.

(written) De man wiens boek ik geleend heb, is ziek.
(speken & written) De man van wie ik het boek geleend heb, is ziek.
(Note the new word order)
(speken) De man die 'n boek ik geleend heb, is ziek.
(written) Het huis welks dak ingestort is, is gisteren verkocht.
(speken & written) Het huis waarvan het dak ingestort is, is gisteren verkocht.

8.5.7 PREPOSITION PLUS WHOSE

a. As we have seen ‘whose’ is normally expressed in Dutch by van wie or waarvan. A complication arises, however, when one is confronted with a sentence like the following:
The man in whose chair I am sitting is my uncle.
It is impossible to have in and van together. In such an instance wiens, although stilted when used as above, is somewhat more common when a preposition is involved.

De man in wiens stoel ik zit, is mijn oom.

12 the dat can be omitted
But wier, as in De vrouw in wie stoeik sit, is mijn tante is very rare.

In speech the following would be used:

De man in wie z’n stoeil ik sit...
De vrouw in wie d’r stoeil ik sit...
De mensen in wie d’r stoeil ik sit...

In writing, if one wants to avoid wiens and wier, the following would be preferable:

De man/vrouw/mensen in de stoeil van wie ik sit,...

b A preposition + whose, when the antecedent is a thing, i.e., not a person, also causes complications if one wishes to avoid using welks. Once again, as with wiens, welks is sometimes found in the formal written language when preceded by a preposition:

Het huis op welks dak de kat de hele nacht heeft gezeten, is ingestort.

This would not be said in the spoken language, however. Then the following would be more usual:

Het huis waar de kat de hele nacht op het dak (van) gezeten heeft, is ingestort.

The van is not necessary and would usually be omitted.

8.5.8 INDEPENDENT RELATIVES

These are relatives that begin sentences and thus have no antecedent: die/wie\textsuperscript{13} — he who; war — that which, what; hetgeen — that which, what. They could also be regarded as indefinite pronouns.

Wie (die) eens steelt, is voor altijd een dief.
He who steals is branded a thief forever.
Wie (die) komen wil, moet nu betalen.
Whoever\textsuperscript{14} wants to come must pay now.
Wat je zegt is allemaal onzin.
What (that which) you’re saying is simply nonsense.

Here the meaning is dat wat. This war is commonly replaced in the written language by hetgeen (say: ‘t geven).

Hetzee je doet is gevaarlijk.
What (that which) you are doing is dangerous.
Hetgeen ik zeggen wil is dit.
What (that which) I want to say is the following.

8.5.9 LESS COMMON RELATIVES

a The relative hetgeen commonly replaces in writing the war which refers back to a whole clause; it is, however, an archaic form (see p. 64).

Hij heeft zijn auto tot in loss gereden, hetgeen ik erg jammer vind.

In this sense hetwelk (also written ‘welk’) can also be used; this form is also archaic.

De eendracht is in het land hersteld, hetwelk (hetgeen) de gehele bevolking met vreugde verruilt.

b Historically related to hetwelk (and welks which was dealt with earlier) is the relative welke\textsuperscript{12} which often replaces die in formal writing:

De regering welke (die) dat bekendgemaakt heeft, is gisteren afgetreden.
De idealen welke (die) eertijds de jeugd bestielden, doen ons gims glimlachen.

c A further common usage of welke\textsuperscript{12} which cannot be avoided, even in speech, is the following adjectival relative:

Hij zei dat hij alles begrepen had, welke opmerking ik niet de moeite waard vond tegen te spreken.
Max Havelaar, welk boek (welke roman) ik op mijn veertiende jaar leerde kennen, vind ik nog steeds prachtig.

8.5.10 ADJECTIVAL ADJUNCTS REPLACING RELATIVE CLAUSES

In formal style, and often in journalism, one finds on occasions an avoidance of relative clauses by placing the information usually contained in the relative clause before the noun it refers to as one does an adjective. The adjunct always contains a present or past participle (or occasionally an infinitive — see last example).

Het boek dat ik gisteren inhand, heb ik aan mijn beste vriend gegeven.
Het gisteren door mij ingebonden boek heb ik aan mijn beste vriend gegeven.
Hij heeft een rijkssdaalder gevonden in de boekenkast die hij gemaakt heeft.
Hij heeft een rijkssdaalder gevonden in de door hem gemaakte boekenkast.
De bomen die in dit park staan zijn allemaal eiken.
De in dit park staande bomen zijn allemaal eiken.
Het bedrag dat u nog betalen moet.
Het nog door u te betalen bedrag.

Some adjectival adjuncts can be of unwieldy length as the following extreme example taken from a newspaper illustrates:

De in 1949 wegens collaboratie en roven van kunstschatten tot 8 maanden gevangenisstraf veroordeelde nu 77 jaar oude Blaricumse miljonair Pieter Menten, heeft het land weten te ontvluchten.
Relative clauses must be used in English when translating such adjectival adjuncts. (see p. 164)

8.5.11 Under (10) examples of Dutch participial constructions which are rendered by relative clauses in English are given. There are, however, participial (both past and present) constructions in English which must be translated by relative clauses in Dutch.

The houses built in the fifties are noisy.
*De huizen die in de jaren vijftig gebouwd zijn, zijn gehorig.*

This could also be rendered by an adjectival adjunct:
*De in de jaren vijftig gebouwde huizen zijn gehorig.*

The man reading the paper in the corner of the room is seriously ill.
*De man die in de hoek de krant zit te lezen, is ernstig ziek.*

8.5.12 See note 3 on use of *dat*, p. 194.

8.6 Indefinite pronouns (*onbepaalde voornaamwoorden*)

One

The English pronoun 'one' has an exact equivalent in Dutch which is *men*. Like its English counterpart, *men* belongs more in formal speech and writing than in everyday language. In conversation it is commonly replaced by unstressed *je* or *ze* (i.e. they, see p. 165). It differs from English, however, in that *men* can only serve as a subject pronoun; when the object is needed, *je* (i.e. unstressed *jou*) or *iemand* is used in colloquial style; in formal style a passive is often used. (see p. 161)

If a teacher finds one in a classroom at lunchtime one is punished.
*Als een leraar je tussen de middag in een klaslokaal vindt, word je gestraft.*

The possessive pronoun 'one's' is rendered by *zijn* and the reflexive 'oneself' by *zich*.

One has to pay one's taxes every year.
*Men moet jaarlijks zijn belasting betalen.*

Everyone, -body

The most usual word is *iedereen*. Occasionally just *ieder* is used. In more formal style *een ieder* and *elkeen* are also found.

Someone, -body; anyone, -body; no-one, -body

The subtle distinction between 'someone' and 'anyone' does not exist in Dutch; both are rendered by *iemand*. When 'anyone' is used with a negative in English, Dutch simply uses *niemand* (nobody).

*Heb je iemand gezien?*
Did you see anyone?
*Ja, ik heb iemand gezien.*
Yes, I saw someone.
*Nee, ik heb niemand gezien.*
No, I didn't see anyone (i.e. I saw nobody).

*Iemand* and *niemand* also have a genitive form *iemands* and *niemands*, eg. *iemands pet* – somebody’s cap.

'Somebody else' is *iemand anders*.

'Somebody else's cap' – *iemand anders' *n* pet (spoken) *de* pet van *iemand anders* (written) also – *andermans* pet (written)

Something; anything; nothing

(see also *ergens*, *nergens* and *overal* p. 71)

The situation here is similar to that above: 'something/anything' are rendered by *iets* or more colloquially by *wat*; 'nothing' is *niets* or in the spoken language *niks*.

*Heeft ze iets/wat gekocht?*
Did she buy anything?
*Ja, ze heeft iets/wat gekocht.*
Yes, she bought something.
*Nee, ze heeft niets gekocht.*
No, she didn't buy anything. (i.e. she bought nothing)

For *iets/wat* and *niets* followed by an adjective see p. 77.

Note: *iets* and *wat* also render the adverb 'somewhat'.

Whoever; whatever (see p. 203)

*Wie... ook* and *wat... ook* translate the above.

*Wie er ook komt, wij zullen voor hem kunnen zorgen.*
Whoever comes, we will be able to take care of them.

*Alwie* (whoever) and *alwat* (whatever) are sometimes used in the written language.

Note: *Wie dat zegt is een leugenaar.*
Whoever (= he who) says that is a liar. (see p. 66)
*die* is used in formal style instead of *wie.*
Many, several, various, some, others, a few

veel, vele(n) much, many
verscheidene(n) several
ettelijke(n) various
verschillende(n) some
sommige(n) others
anderen(n) a few
een paar the one who/which, those who/which
degene(n) die, hetgene dat that which; what

With the exception of een paar all words in this category (plus also alle and beide – see below) add -n when they are used independently referring to people. All but the last two can also be used as adjectives before nouns, in which case they do not add -n, nor when used independently referring to things.

Verscheidene mensen willen niet komen.
Sommigen blijven thuis maar anderen gaan naar de bioscoop.
Ik heb vandaag een paar boeken gekocht. Ik heb er ook enkele gekocht.

Note that vele when used attributively before a plural noun can also be veel; eg. veel kinderen, veel boeken.
The form veel can also be used independently when referring to non-animate things.

Veel (winkels understood) hebben moeten sluiten.
but
Velen (mensen understood) hebben moeten gaan.

Both
a The basic word for ‘both’ is beide. It is used in the same way as the expressions given above, i.e. beide mensen; beide boeken; beide (boeken understood) waren duur; beiden (mensen understood) zijn vertrokken.
b In addition, there is a form allebei which is used to translate ‘both of us/you/them’ — also used with nominal subjects and objects.
Ze gaan allebei naar de markt.
They are both going/both of them are going to the market.
Ik heb ze allebei in de stad gezien.
I saw them both/both of them in town.
c Expressions such as ‘both the brothers’ can be translated as follows: de twee broers, beide broers of de broers gaan allebei naar de markt.

All (see also ergens, nergens and overal below)
The way in which ‘all’ is translated into Dutch is similar to the way in which ‘both’ is translated (see above).

a The basic word is alle and is used like the expressions dealt with above, i.e. alle mensen, alle boeken, alle (boeken understood) waren duur, allen (mensen understood) hebben moeten gaan.
b In addition, there is a form allemaal which is used to translate ‘all of us/you/them’.

Ze gaan allemaal naar de markt.
They are all going to the market. (or All of them are going...)
Ik heb ze allemaal in de stad gezien.
I saw all of them in town. (or them all)

Note: the word allemaal is also used very idiomatically in spoken Dutch with a variety of meanings only vaguely related to the literal meaning.
Ik kan dat allemaal niet begrijpen.
I can’t understand any of that.
c Expressions such as ‘all the men’ can be translated in three ways: al de mannen, alle mannen of de mannen zijn er allemaal geweest.
d Note that ambiguity of the following English ‘all’:

That’s all I can tell you i.e. everything or the only thing.
The first meaning is translated as dat is alles (or even al) wat ik je vertellen kan and the second as dat is het enige wat ik je vertellen kan.

In practice, however, alles is used in both cases.
e Note that alles means ‘everything’ and al usually means ‘already’ (see c and d above for exceptions).

Pronominal use of ergens, nergens and overal
These three words which are usually used as adverbs rendering English ‘somewhere/somewhow’, nowhere and everywhere also have a pronominal function: when iets (something), niets (nothing) and alles (everything) are preceded by a preposition, they are often replaced (particularly in speech) by ergens, nergens and overal respectively and the preposition follows these words.

Hij kijkt ergens naar.15
He is looking at something.

15 Note the following adverbial use of ergens: Ergens heeft hij wel gelijk – Somewhere he is right.
I told him about nothing.

You can do it with anything.

Should the indefinite pronoun by followed by a relative clause, however, those alternative forms can't be used (see p. 64).

Hij kijkt naar iets wat ik gemaakt heb.
He is looking at something I have made.

Je kunt het doen met alles wat je vinden kunt.
You can do it with anything you can find.

8.7 Interrogative pronouns (vragende voornaamwoorden)

(For Interrogative Adverbs see p. 203)

8.7.1 WHO; TO WHOM, FROM WHOM ETC.

The interrogative pronoun 'who' is wie, e.g. Wie is je leraar? Questions involving 'who' plus prepositions are always posed as follows: Aan wie heb je het schrijf gegeven? To whom did you give the exercise book? English usually employs the word order 'Who(m) did you give the book to?' This order is not possible in Dutch.

Who(m) did you get those scissors from?
Van wie heb je die schaar gekregen?

English speakers must be careful not to confuse the interrogative 'who' in indirect questions (i.e. wie in Dutch) with the relative pronoun 'who' (i.e. die or waar in Dutch, see p. 63)

Ik weet niet wie het gedaan heeft. (indirect interrogative)
Hij is degene die het gedaan heeft. (relative)

8.7.2 WHOSE

The possessive interrogative pronoun 'whose' is wiens or van wie.

Wiens boek is dit? (lit.)
Van wie is dit boek?
Wie z'n boek is dit? (spoken language)

Whose book is this?

When the reference is obviously to a female being or plural beings, the written language also knows the form wie, and the spoken language wie d'r for feminine beings.

Wie d'r b.h. is dit?
Whose bra is this?

8.7.3 WHAT

a 'What' is wat but when used in combination with a preposition it is replaced by waar + preposition which can also be separated.

Wat heb je gedaan?
What have you done?
Waarmee heb je het gedaan/Waar heb je het mee gedaan?
What did you do it with?

b 'What kind/sort of a' is rendered by the idiom wat voor een.

Wat voor een auto heb je/Wat heb je voor een auto?
What sort of car do you have?

c Sometimes English 'what' is rendered by hoe in Dutch (see p. 109).

What time is it?
Hoe laat is het?
What is your name?
Hoe is uw naam?/Hoe heet u?

d Sometimes English 'what' means 'which' (see 8.7.4 below)

8.7.4 WHICH

Dutch welk(e) can be used attributively before nouns or independently. English often uses 'what' in this sense too.

Welk boek (welke film, welke mensen) heb je gezien?
Welke heb je gekocht?
Which/what ones did you buy?
Welk (boek understood) heb je gekocht?
Which/what one did you buy?
9 Adjectives (bijvoeglijke naamwoorden)

9.1 Rules for inflection (verbuiging)

An adjective used attributively (i.e. before the noun) will always take an -e ending except in the following cases:

a. Before a singular neuter noun preceded by een, elk, geen, ieder, menig, veel, zo'n, zulk.

In addition one still finds omission of the -e inflection after possessive pronouns (i.e., mijn, jouw, zijn, ons etc.) but nowadays the ending is more commonly used than not, i.e. ons kleine land rather than ons klein land (lit.).

It should be noted that in expressions such as 'Jan's big house' Jan's acts as a possessive adjective and thus the adjective following it is inflected, i.e. Jans grote huis.

b. Before singular neuter nouns preceded by nothing, i.e. oud brood, zoet water. Note that in all other cases an ending is required, eg. het oude brood, zulke oude huizen, stoute kinderen, dat stomme ding etc.

Predicative adjectives (i.e. those not used before nouns as in 'the book is green') never inflect in Dutch.

9.1.1 There are numerous cases where an adjective does not take an -e ending where you would expect one according to the rules above:

a. Adjectives ending in -en, which includes materials (eg. houten, zilveren, open, egen) and strong past participles (eg. gesloten, vertrokken, opgeblazen).

Exception: verschrikken (several) always takes -e.

When adjectival past participles ending in -en are used as nouns they take -e (-en in plural), eg. de betrokkene etc.

b. A limited number of adjectives do not take -e but are affixed to the following noun instead (see pp. 91).

c. Some adjectives of foreign origin are indeclinable: beige, crème, lila, nylon, oranje, plaste 1, platina, aluminium, rose.

d. Place name adjectives in -er: Groninger koek, Haarlemmer olie.

e. Comparatives of more than three syllables: interessanter, belangrijker. One will often hear such comparatives being inflected in the spoken language, however (see p. 78).

f. A few adjectives take on a figurative meaning if uninflected: oud-soldaat = ex-soldier, een groot man = a great man (but een grote vrouw).

g. The adjectives rechts and links have their own peculiar form in -er and are often written as one word, particularly when referring to parts of the body and items of clothing: de rechterhand, de linkerschoen; also de linkeroever, rechterkant, linkerkant.

Preceding other nouns they behave as normal adjectives: rechts verkeer, de linkse partijen.

h. It is very common for adjectives preceding nouns referring to human beings (particularly masculine beings) to be left uninflected after articles. One is advised only to copy those one has heard or read and otherwise to apply the ending, eg. de waarnemend burgemeester (the acting mayor), de tijdelijk zaakgelastigde (the temporary chargé d'affaires), een bekwaam muzicus (a competent musician), een vroom man (a pious man), een beroemd schrijfster (a famous authoress), Geyl is een bekend Nederlands historicus (Geyl is a famous Dutch historian).

i. The adjective does not inflect after een, geen, zo'n etc. before the common gender noun iemand, eg. een belangrijk iemand — an important person.

Note: een aardig mens — a nice person can only refer to a female.

j. There is a long list of nouns, particularly neuter nouns, which, even when preceded by the singular definite article, do not inflect the preceding adjective as one would expect according to the rules given above. The adjective and the noun are regarded as a compound in such cases. In the plural the adjective is, however, inflected, eg. het academisch ziekenhuis, de academische ziekenhuizen.

The following list is not complete but will serve to illustrate the concept:

het academisch ziekenhuis, het academische ziekenhuis
het centraal station, het centrale station
het cultureel akkoord, het culturele akkoord
het dagelijks leven, het dagelijks leven
het economisch herstel, het economisch herstel
het Engels Instituut, het Engelse instituut
het geestelijk leven, het geestelijke leven
het Gents Advertentieblad, het Gents advertentieblad
het heilig sacrament, het heilig sacrament
het Koninklijk Gezin, het Koninklijke gezin
het medisch onderzoek, het medisch onderzoek
het menselijk lichaam, het menselijk lichaam
het noordelijk halfzuid, het noordelijk halfzuid
het noordoostelijk deel, het noordoostelijk deel
het openbaar vervoer, het openbaar vervoer
het sociaal pakket, het sociaal pakket
het stedelijk museum, het stedelijk museum
het stoffelijk overschot, het stoffelijk overschot
het uitoerend orgaan, het uitoerend orgaan
het zelfrijzende bakmeel, het zelfrijzende bakmeel

1 Nowadays one also commonly hears plèstikke or plèstikke before nouns.
The parts of speech also belong in this category, eg. *het bijvoeglijk naamwoord, het wederkerend werkwoord* etc.

9.1.2 Inflection often causes spelling changes in accordance with the phonetic spelling rules of Dutch.

a Adjectives with *aa*, *ee*, *oo* and *uu*, drop one vowel, eg. *kaal – kale, geel – gele, groot – grote, duur – dure*. Those ending in *-eel* add a diaeresis, eg. *officiele – officiële*. Note also that past participles used adjectively are also subject to this rule, eg. *gehaat (from haten – to hate) – gehate, vergrooted (from vergroten – to enlarge) – vergrote.*

b In adjectives with a long vowel or a diphthong and ending in *-f*, the *f* changes to *v* (i.e. the *f* becomes voiced between two vowels), eg. *lief – lief, braaf – brave, doof – doove.*

A word such as *laf* goes *laffe*, however, because it contains a short vowel (see rule d).

c Adjectives with a long vowel or diphthong and ending in *-s* change to *z* (because of its intervocalic position), eg. *vies – viese, overzees – overzeese, hees – heise, kuis – kuese, histories – historise* (see p. 17), *Paris – Parijs.*

Adjectives of nationality ending in *-ees* change to *ese*, eg. *Chinees – Chinese, also Fries – Friese* (as plural nouns they take *z*, eg. *Chinezen, Friegen*).


Exceptions: *grof – grove, bros – broze* (often pronounced *graffe* and *brosse, however*).

e Adjectives with a long vowel or diphthong ending in *-d* are often pronounced with a vocalised *d*, eg. *rode – roote, goed – goete, oud – ouwe.* They are sometimes written like this too in less formal style.

f Note the adjective *bijdehand* (smart, bright) which goes *bijdehante.*

9.1.3 A limited number of adjectives usually denoting location take *-ste* instead of *-e.*

- bovenste, middelste, benedenste; binnenste, buitenste; achterste, voorste, onderste.

(Note: *binnenste-buiten = inside out, onderste-boven = upside down, achterste-voren = back to front.*

In addition one often hears *enigste* instead of *enige* but the former is an analogical form and should be avoided, eg. *Dit is de enigste auto die wij nog hebben.* (This is the only car which we still have.) The words *laatste, zoveelste, hoeveelste* belong here too (see p. 226).

9.1.4 There is also an *-s* inflection of the adjective in Dutch. It is used nowadays in only a limited number of cases. It is always used after *iets/wat* (i.e. something), *nieets, veel, allerletst, weinig, een heleboel, wat voor, genoeg, eg. iets nieuws – something new, nieets sterker – nothing stronger (added here to the comparative), een heleboel moois.*

*Wat heb je nou voor lekkers gekocht? – What sort of delicious things have you bought?*

*Er is nog genoeg fruut te bedenken. – There are enough nice things to think of.*

Note: *wat and iets can mean ‘something’ or ‘somewhat’; with the latter meaning followed by an adjective, no *-s* is added, eg. *Het ziet er wat huis uit – It looks somewhat new.*

9.1.5 Formerly there was a complete paradigm of strong and weak adjectival endings for all four cases, as is still the case in German. The above rules for *-e* and *-s* inflection are in fact all that is left of these declensions except for those endings preserved in standard expressions and those found in older literary texts, eg. *op het er – red-handed (dative), te allen tijde – always (dative), in koelen bloede – in cold blood (dative); blootsvoets – bare-footed (genitive), grotendeels – on the whole (genitive), vol zoete wijns (arch.) – full of sweet wine (genitive). The fact that these adjectives are often written together with the noun indicates that they are no longer regarded as inflected adjectives in the normal sense but more as compound nouns.

9.2 The comparative of the adjective *(de vergrotende trap)*

9.2.1 FORMATION OF THE COMPARATIVE:

The comparative is formed, as in English, by adding *-er* to the adjective whereby the same spelling changes apply as for *-e* inflection (see p. 76), eg. *groot – groter, doof – dooper,* *vies – vieser, dik – dikker.*

Adjectives ending in *-t* take *-der, eg. puur – purder, zuiver – zuivder, ver – verder.*

There are two adjectives that have an irregular comparative form, as in English:

- *goed – beter (good – better),
  kwaad – erger (bad – worse)*

Note: *kwaad meaning ‘angry’ becomes kwader. All other irregular comparatives are actually adverbs (see p. 93).*
9.2.2 INFLECTION OF THE COMPARATIVE

When used attributively comparatives follow the rules for the inflection of simple adjectives, e.g. een grotere jongen, een kleiner huis.

Comparatives of more than three syllables cannot be inflected although the -e ending is commonly heard in such cases, e.g. een belangrijker man, een interessanter geschiedenis.

It is also quite common for some comparatives of two syllables not to inflect; here one has the choice, however, e.g. mooier boeken dan deze ken ik niet; na korter of langer tijd.

The rules for -s inflection also apply to comparatives, e.g. iets groter - something bigger.

9.2.3 USE OF MEER WITH THE COMPARATIVE

In English the comparative of longer adjectives is formed by placing 'more' before the word rather than by adding -er, e.g. more important, more interesting. As a general rule one can say that this is not the case in Dutch, e.g. belangrijker, interessanter. The comparative with meer is, however, known in Dutch but is seldom compulsory and should thus be avoided if in doubt, e.g. succesvoller or meer succesvol, typischer oder mehr typisch (often used with adjectives ending in -isch). It is often used before adjectives of nationality, e.g. meer Hollands (= more Dutch, Dutcher, although the latter sounds somewhat peculiar in English) and is also usually used before past participles used as adjectives, e.g. meer geïnteresseerd, meer gewend aan, meer opgewonden. On occasions -er is possible in such cases, e.g. een vervalenere huis dan dit is er nauwelijks.

9.2.4 'MORE AND MORE' CONSTRUCTIONS

Dutch too has the potential to say meer en meer, dieper en dieper. It is, however, more common to use steeds/alsmaar + comparative, e.g. de hemel wordt steeds blauwer - the sky is getting bluer and bluer. Another common alternative is hoe langer hoe + comparative, e.g. hoe langer hoe blauwer, hij werd hoe langer hoe brutaler = he got more and more cheeky (as time passed).

9.2.5 ATTRIBUTIVE USE OF COMPARATIVE FORMS

Note the following difference between English and Dutch: the better of the two boys/the best of the three boys = de beste van de twee jongens/de beste van de drie jongens, i.e. no such distinction is made in Dutch. This is not the case after een, e.g. ik heb een betere oplossing gevonden but mijn oplossing was de beste van de twee - the better of the two.

The comparative is, however, found after articles and demonstratives in expressions like the following where no direct comparison is being made: een oudere heer - an elderly gentleman, de jongere generatie - the younger generation, de hogere standen - the upper classes.

9.2.6 'MORE THAN' AND 'AS BIG AS' CONSTRUCTIONS

He is bigger than I - hij is groter dan ik. Colloquially one often hears als instead of dan but this should not be copied. The very English error of saying 'she is richer than me' must be avoided in Dutch; a Dutchman would always say ik. Similarly in 'He is more important than you' the 'you' is je not jou, i.e. subject pronoun. But: ik vind hem aardiger dan jou, i.e. object pronoun. (see p. 58)

Note: He is even bigger than I - hij is nog groter dan ik.

9.3 The superlative of the adjective (de overtreffende trap)

9.3.1 FORMATION OF THE SUPERLATIVE

The superlative of the adjective is formed by adding -st whereby no change in the spelling takes place, e.g. groot - grootst, doof - doofst, dik - dikst.

Adjectives ending in -s simply add a -t, e.g. vies - viest, fris - frist.

The two adjectives that have an irregular comparative also have an irregular superlative:

good - beter - best (good - better - best)
kwaad - erger - ergst (bad/evil - worse - worst)

9.3.2 INFLECTION OF SUPERLATIVES

Superlatives used attributively are always inflected regardless of their length, unlike comparatives, e.g. de belangrijkste man, het interessantste verhaal.

9.3.3 USE OF MEEST WITH SUPERLATIVES

There are certain parallels between the use of meest in superlative and the use of meer in comparatives. Generally speaking all adjectives, however long, add -st, unlike English, eg. most interesting - interessantst, most exciting - opwindendsst. The superlative with meest is, however, necessary in Dutch with adjectives ending in -isch and -st, e.g. typisch - meest typisch, juist - meest juist, robuust - meest robuust.

For the same phonological reasons adjectives ending in -s also sometimes form their superlative in this way, eg. los - meest los, fris - meest fris.

1 Als is used in expressions such as '(just) as big as I' = (net) zo groot als ik. There is an alternative form: even groot als.
As with comparatives some longer adjectives such as succesvol and opwindend will be heard in the superlative with meest, although an -st ending is also correct. One should, however, only copy examples one has heard or read except for adjectives of nationality and for past participles used as adjectives, eg. meest Hollands (most Dutch); ik ben de meest geïnteresseerde, hij is de meest opgewonden van de groep. There are in addition some adjectives of foreign origin which can’t take an -st ending and thus use meest, eg. meest sexy, meest beige.

9.3.4 USE OF THE SUPERLATIVE

There is one usage of the superlative in Dutch which replaces an English comparative (see p. 78); otherwise it is used as in English.

9.3.5 ABSOLUTE SUPERLATIVES

Dutch knows an adjectival intensifier formed from the superlative, eg. een alleraardigste man — a very nice man, een allerbeste vriend — a very good friend.

In addition hoogst and uiterst (actually adverbs) are used to intensify adjectives, eg. Dat was hoogst interessant — most interesting, Dat was uiterst belangrijk — extremely important.

Here hoogst and uiterst simply replace ‘very’. (see p. 93)

The word best is used as an adjectival modifier, eg. Ik vind het best leuk bij hen = quite nice; ik vind het best = I have no objections.

Best is also used in letters, eg. Beste Wim = Dear Wim.

9.3.6 NOTES ON SUPERLATIVES

a Note the following compound adjectives incorporating superlatives: dichtstbijzijnde (eg. de dichtstbijzijnde brievenbus) — closest, dichtstbijgelagen — closest.

b There is a small group of adjectives of location which take an -ste inflection instead of -e and do not thus belong to the realm of superlatives, eg. middelste, benedenste etc. (see p. 76)

9.4 Adjectives used only predicatively or attributively

9.4.1 There is a small number of adjectives which can never precede a noun and thus are never inflected, eg. anders (different), zoek (lost). One says for example Mijn pen is zoek, but if one wanted to express this with an attributive adjective, one would need to use another word, eg. mijn zoekgeraakte pen. Similarly verschillend could replace anders. In addition the word stuk (broken), which is occasionally used before the noun and inflected, is however usually only used predicatively and is better replaced by kapoor if an attributive adjective is required.

9.4.2 The material adjectives betonnen, gouden, houten, ijzeren, marmeren etc. can only be used attributively. Predicatively one says van beton, van goud etc., eg. this wooden house — dit houten huis, this house is wooden — dit huis is van hout.

9.5 Predicative adjectives followed by prepositions

It is impossible to give a complete list of such adjectives, particularly of those derived from verbs but the following will serve as a guide. Many have the same preposition as in English. If in doubt, a good dictionary should give which preposition to use. * indicates those derived from verbs (i.e. past participles); these adjectives can either precede or follow the object to which they refer, eg. ik was zeer in hem geïnteresseerd of ik was zeer geïnteresseerd in hem; hij is met haar getrouwd of hij is getrouwd met haar.

The other adjectives in this list can also follow the object they refer to for particular emphasis, eg. Met jou ben ik tevreden, tegen mij was hij aardig.
* bezorgd over
blue with
* bleek van
pale with
* blij met
pleased with
* boos op
angry with
* dankbaar voor
grateful for
* doi op
mad about, keen on
* enthousiast over
enthusiastic about
* ervaren in
experienced in
* gedoemd tot
doomed to
* gehecht aan
attached to (fig.)
* gehuwd met
married to
* geïnteresseerd in
interested in
* gek op
mad about, keen on
* gelijk aan
identical to
* gelukkig met
happy with
* geneigd tot
inclined to
* gepikeerd over
sore at
* getrouwd met
married to
* (on)gevoelig voor
(in)sensitive to
* goed in
good at
* ingenomen met
pleased, taken with
* ingesteld op
orientated, geared to
* jaloers op
jealous, envious of
* kwaad op
angry with
* telijk tegen
nasty to
* links van
to the left of
* medeplichtig aan
accessory to
* nijdig op
angry with, mad at
* noodzakelijk voor
necessary for, to
* omgeven door
surrounded by
* omringd door
surrounded by
* onbijspeelbaar door
liable, subject to
* ongerust over
anxious, worried about
* onverschillig voor
indifferent to, regardless of
* onzichtbaar voor
invisible to
* opgewonden over
excited about
* rechts van
to the right of
* rijk aan
rich in
* schadelijk voor
harmful to
* schuldig aan
guilty of

slecht in
bad at
* telegesteld in
disappointed in, with s.o.
* telegesteld over
disappointed in, with
ten noorden van
to the north of
* ten oosten van
to the east of
* ten westen van
to the west of
* ten zuiden van
to the south of
* tevreden met, over
pleased, satisfied with
* toegankelijk voor
accessible to
* trots op
proud of
* trouw aan
faithful to
* typisch voor, typerend voor
typical of
* verbaasd over
amazed at
* verbannen uit
banished from
* vergeleken bij, met
compared to, with
* verliefd op
in love with
* verrast door
surprised by
* verslaafd aan
different from, to
* vervangen door
addicted to
* verwonderd over
replaced by
* vriendelijk tegen
amazed at
* woedend op
friendly to
* zwak in
weak at

1 _Jaloers_ is ambiguous; if one specifically wants to express envy, the verb _benijden_ must be used, eg. _Ik benijd hem_ — _I envy him, I am envious of him_.

2 It is also possible to use _benoorden, beoosten_ etc. as prepositions in themselves, eg. _benoorden de grote rivieren_ = _ten noorden van de grote rivieren_. They are usually found only in the written language.

3 Dutch _vol_ does not require any preposition, eg. _de emmer was vol water_ — _the bucket was full of water_.

---

*ANXIOUS ABOUT

BLUE WITH
PALLE WITH
PLEASED WITH
ANGRY WITH
GRATEFUL FOR
MAD ABOUT, KEEN ON
ENTHUSIASTIC ABOUT
EXPERIENCED IN
DOOMED TO
ATTACHED TO (FIG.)
MARRIED TO
INTERESTED IN
MAD ABOUT, KEEN ON
IDENTICAL TO
HAPPY WITH
INCLINED TO
SORE AT
MARRIED TO
INSENSITIVE TO
GOOD AT
GOOD TO (S.O.)
PLEASSED, TAKEN WITH
ORIENTATED, GEARED TO
JEALOUS, ENVIOUS OF
ANGRY WITH
NASTY TO
TO THE LEFT OF
ACCESSORY TO
ANGRY WITH, MAD AT
NECESSARY FOR, TO
SURROUNDED BY
SURROUNDED BY
liable, subject to
ANXIOUS, WORRIED ABOUT
INDIFFERENT TO, REGARDLESS OF
INVISIBLE TO
EXCITED ABOUT
TO THE RIGHT OF
RICH IN
HARMFUL TO
GUILTY OF
9.6 Adjectives used as nouns

9.6.1 Very often in English we use constructions such as 'large boats and little ones'. The 'ones' cannot be translated into Dutch and is rendered by the adjective, eg. grote boten en kleine. Whether the adjective is inflected or not in Dutch depends on whether it would be if the noun that is understood followed, eg. een groot huis en een klein (huis).

9.6.2 De rijke, de blinde etc. can stand alone for de rijke man, de blinde man. Similarly in the plural de rijken, de blinden mean the rich and the blind.

9.6.3 Het goede — good, het kwade — evil, het mooie — the nice thing, het stomme — the stupid thing. The inflected adjective preceded by the neuter definite article renders an abstract noun, eg. Het leuke is dat ze een studiebeurs gekregen heeft. The nice thing is she got a scholarship. Het mooie van schaatsen is dat iedereen het doen kan. The nice thing about skating is that everyone can do it.

9.6.4 Colours are het groen, het geel etc., eg. Het groen van jouw trui bevalt me niet. The green of your jumper doesn’t appeal to me.

9.6.5 Note that adjectives of nationality are used in almost all cases to form the name of the feminine inhabitant, eg. Chinees = Chinese, de Chinese = the Chinese woman (see p. 248-254).

9.7 Formation of Adjectives

9.7.1 SUFFIXES

It should be noted that the endings -aardig, -kundig, -matig, -talig, -waardig and -zijdig take the stress, eg. plantardig, veelzijdig.

Note: Sometimes the same word can take a number of the endings given below, each new combination giving a new word, eg. kinderachtig — childish, puerile; kind — senile, second childhood; kinderkleed — child-like.

-e/loos is equivalent in every way to English -less, eg. doelloos — aimless, ouderloos — parentless, hopeloos — hopeless.

Note: Werkloos (unemployed) is often pronounced werkloos and sometimes written as such. The inclusion of -e- is simply a matter of sound.

-aardig
-aantwoordig
-aardig
-aardig
-

achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achtig
achte
-isch (sometimes spelt -ies) is chiefly found in foreign, often scientific words and is equivalent to English -ic, -ical, eg. historisch, socialistisch, logisch.

-s (formerly -sch and still found in pre-war books as such)
1 common ending for nationalities, eg. Nederlands, Zweeds, Engels, Frans.
2 for adjectives from place-names, eg. Amsterdams, Leids, Londens, Gouds, Gronings.
3 it is sometimes added to words other than proper nouns, eg. kerks - churchy, hemels - heavenly, duïvers - devilish, aards - earthy, kinds - senile, schools - pedantic, speels - playful.

It is this ending which one employs in the very commonly used expressions op z'n adjective +s which are similar in meaning to the French 'à la + adjective', eg. op z'n Frans - à la française (i.e. as the French do, in the French way).

One can often invent such adjectives forming them from the names of people one knows, eg. op z'n Wims - as Wim would do it (i.e. sloppily, well etc.)

-(e)lijk a very common suffix which has no adverbial qualities despite its historical connections with English -ly (compare lovely, homely). The 'e' is usually included but not always, eg. vriendelijk - friendly, maatschappelijk - social, menselijk - human(e), ongelovelijk5 - unbelievable, vreselijk or vreselijk5 - terrible (usually the latter), gevaarlijk - dangerous, persoonlijk - personal.

-zaam difficult to isolate a meaning for this ending. It is relatively common, eg. langzaam - slow, buigaam - flexible, gehoorzaam - obedient.

-vol similar to English -ful, eg. succesvol - successful, talentvol - talented, waardevol - valuable.

-vormig corresponds to English -shaped and is still a very productive ending, eg. trechternvormig - funnel-shaped, bolvormig - spherical-shaped, tegelvormig - tile-shaped.

-waardig equivalent to English -worthy, eg. bezienswaardig - worth seeing, bewonderenswaardig - praiseworthy, betreurenswaardig - lamentable, zeevaardig - sea-worthy, merkwaardig - remarkable.

9.7.2 PREFIXES

-on- is the most common means of negating adjectives and is used in a similar way to English un-, eg. onvriendelijk - unfriendly, ondankbaar - ungrateful. On is always unstressed.

There are a few compounds with on- whose principal component no longer exists, eg. onnozel - silly, ondeugend - naughty.

-in- Some foreign words, as in English, are negated by the addition of in-(im-), eg. inkonsekwent - inconsistent, inefficiënt - inefficient, immoreel - immoral, intolerant.

Dutch knows a number of adjectival intensifiers which are very commonly used:

aarts- aartsdom - really stupid, aartslid - very lazy.

dood- (very common) doodarm - very poor, doodgewoon - quite ordinary, doodeenvoudig - simple, doodstil - very quiet, doodemoe - very tired.

Note: doodbang - very afraid, doodbleek - very pale.

hartstikke- (rather colloquial but very common and still productive), hartstikkaleuk - very nice, hartstikkeduur - very expensive, hartstikkestom - very stupid.

hyper- (usually with foreign words), hyperintelligent, hypernervens, hypermodern.

oer- oerdom - very stupid, oeroud - very old, oerlelijk - very ugly, oersaai - terribly boring.

poep(ie)- (vulgar, more so is stront-), poepduur - very dear, poepdeftig - very posh, stronteigenwijs - as stubborn as a mule.
pikdonker (still productive), reuzeleuk — really nice, reuzepopulair — very popular, reuzevervelend — very annoying.

stapel- (only used in combination with words for mad), stapelgek, stapeldoord.

super- superfijn — very fine, superknap — very clever, supervrelijs — very safe.

ultra- (usually with foreign words), ultradriekal, ultraconservatief.

In addition, the prefix over- has the same force as in English, eg. overrijp — over-ripe, overgevoelig — over-sensitive, overgaar — over-cooked.

The intensifiers given above are particularly common and are to a degree still productive. In addition to them are others, many of them nouns, which occur in only one compound adjective; sometimes these are translated almost literally, eg. ijskoud — ice-cold, spoegoedkoop — dirt-cheap, but very often in English they are rendered by an 'as - as' phrase, eg. stokdoof — as deaf as a post. Beware when confronted with an English 'as - as' expression more often than not it will be a compound adjective in Dutch although zo - als - expressions do exist too, eg. zo mager als een lat — as thin as a rake; zo blond als een mol — as blind as a bat; zo trots als een pauw — as proud as a peacock.

The following list is by no means complete.

apetrots as proud as a peacock
broodnachter as sober as a judge
drijfmat wet through
glasheider as clear as a bell
haarlij as fine as hair
hemelsbreed very wide
hondsbruutal very cheeky, bold
ijskoud ice-cold
keihard as hard as stone
kernigsond as fit as a fiddle
kersvers very fresh, new; hot from the press
kurkdroog as dry as a bone
loeiheet as hot as hell
loodrecht perpendicular, vertical
mordood as dead as a doornail
peperduur very expensive
piekheer very spruce, smart

ariosBaloon

9.7.3 COLOURS

beige — beige
blauw — blue
bruin — brown
geel — yellow
grijs — grey
groen — green

lila — lilac
oranje — orange
purper — purple
paars — purple
rood — red
rose — pink
wit — white
zwart — black

-kleurig is often used to form new colours from nouns, especially from metals, eg. goudekleurig — gold, zilverkleurig — silver.

licht- and donker- prefixed to any colour render light and dark, eg. lichtgroen, donkerrood. Note: lichtpaars — mauve.

-ig and -achtig (particularly the latter can be suffixed to the colours to render -ish, eg. groenachtig — greenish.
All colours can be compounded with each other to render shades, eg. grijsgroen — greyish green, geelbruin — yellowish brown. Note: zwartwit — black and white, eg. een zwartwit televisietoestel — a black and white television set.

Sometimes nouns are prefixed to the colours as can be done in English, eg. smaragdgroen — emerald green, kastanjebruin — chestnut brown, scharlakenrood — scarlet, okergeel — ochre, pikzwart — black as pitch, roetszwart — as black as soot, bloedrood — blood red, hemelsblauw — sky blue, grasgroen — as green as grass, spierwit — as white as a sheet.

Note: Wat voor kleur is het? — What colour is it?

9.8 Notes on some peculiarities of adjectives

9.8.1 the adjective willen = late (as of deceased persons) precedes the title as in English, eg. willen Prof. T.H. Elschat, willen Koning Karel's zoon = the late King Charles' son. Note: no definite article is required in Dutch in such expressions.

9.8.2 there are a number of standard expressions in which the adjective follows the noun. English knows such cases too, eg. moederlief, vaderlief, moetzielief — mother dear etc., God almachtig — God almighty, gouverneur-generaal — governor-general, Staten-Generaal — States-General, moeder-overste — mother-superior.

9.8.3 some adjectives are now joined to the noun and are seen as forming a new concept, eg. plateland — country, jongeman — young man, jongelui — young people, youth, hogeschool — tertiary school, hoogleraar — professor, vrijgezel — bachelor. The shifted stress in such cases illustrates the degree to which such words are considered compound nouns. There are, however, some which retain the stress on the adjective, eg. zuurkool — sauerkraut, rodekool — red-cabbage. There does not seem to be any rule for inflection in such compounds; they must simply be learnt as they are met. Often one sees halfdrie etc. (i.e. time) written as one word as well as een halfpond, halfkilo.

9.8.4 adjectives of nationality are always written with capitals although some modern writers ignore this. Note that although geographical regions are written as hyphenated nouns, the adjectives derived from them are not, eg. West-Duitsland — Westduits, Midden-Europa — Midden-Europese. Only those prefixes which are in themselves adjectives are hyphenated, eg. Zeeuws-Vlaanderen — Zeeuw-Vlaams, Kaaps-Holland, Brits-Amerikaans.

Also many learned compounds made of two adjectives, eg. literair-critisch.

9.8.5 the adjectives eerstejaars, eerstergangs, tweedehands and voilbloed are prefixed to the noun without inflecting, eg. een tweedehandspiano, een eerstejaarsstudent.

The adjective rot (awful, horrible etc.), which is rather colloquial but very common nowadays, is also prefixed to the noun, eg. een roothuis — a horrible house, een rotdag — a ghastly day; there is, however, a predicative adjective with similar meaning, i.e. rottig.

9.8.6 de and het are prefixed to -zelfde, eg. dezelfde man — the same man, dat is mij allemaal hetzelfde — that is all the same to me.

9.8.7 on occasions when using more than one adjective before a noun in English we join the two by 'and' — this is never done in Dutch, eg. beautiful (and) unusual things — prachtige, buitengewone dingen.

9.8.8 the adjectives heel, geheel and gans — all of which mean 'whole' — although the last two are somewhat literary — can precede the definite article, eg. heel de wereld — the whole world, gans het volk (lit.) — the entire nation.

7 het zwart op wit hebben — to have it (put) down in black and white.
Adverbs (bijwoorden)

The difficulty associated with systematically describing and classifying adverbs is embodied in the Dutch word bijwoord, i.e. a word that is there, put in, tacked on. More specifically they are those words which describe when, where, why and how. They can be individual words or complete phrases. The approach adopted here is to look at the simplest adverbs, i.e. those derived from adjectives, and to list the most common adverbs of time and place (see TMP rule p. 95) as well as interrogative adverbs and finally to look briefly at the formation of adverbs. Adverbs from adjectives plus the diminutive ending -(t)jes are dealt with on p. 110.

The adverb and adjective are identical in Dutch, i.e. Dutch does not know any equivalent of the English -ly ending. (Exception: gewoon - usual; gewoonlijk - usually), eg. He is quick; he runs quickly - Hij is snel; hij rent snel. This rule is easily forgotten when the adverb precedes an inflected adjective, eg. a terribly nice bag - een onzettend leuke tas. Compare: a terrible old man - een verschrikkelijke oude man

Also in:
that is a typically Dutch hat - dat is een typisch Nederlandse hoed

10.1 Comparative and superlative of adverbs

As there is no distinction made between the adjective and the adverb in Dutch the rules for forming the comparative and superlative grades are basically as for adjectives, i.e. by the addition of -er and -st (see p. 77, 79).

The predicative superlative is preceded by the article het and may end in either -st or -ste, but the forms without -e are more common, eg. het mooist(e), het grootst(e). This use of het has a parallel in English:

When are the flowers (the) prettiest? - Wanneer zijn de bloemen het mooist?
Who sang (the) longest? - Wie heeft het langst gezongen?

At times it is difficult to decide whether it is the superlative of the adjective or the adverb that is required; in such cases usually both are correct but the use of the article varies (if 'the' can be left out, it is the adverb one is dealing with).

Which woman is (the) prettiest? — Welke vrouw is het mooist(e)? — adverb
That road is (the) widest. — Die weg is het breedst(e). — adverb
This girl is (the) nicest. — Dit meisje is het aardigste. — adverb and adjective

Irregular comparatives and superlatives:

good — beter — best — good, better, best
graag (see p. 149, 153) — liever — liefst — willingly, more/most willingly
gauw — meer — meest — much, more, most
gewoon — minder — minst — little, less, least

In addition one should note that although dikwijls and vaak (often) are interchangeable, only vaak has a comparative and a superlative form, i.e. vaak — vaker — vaakst. Also with dichtbij and vlakbij (nearby) only the former can be inflected, i.e. dichterbij (het dichtste bij, het dichtstbij) (see p. 80).

For the use of meer/meest to form the comparative and superlative grades of adjectives see p. 78, 79. The rules are the same for adverbs.

Zij is het meest geëmancipeerd van allen aan.
She is the most emancipated of all.

10.1.1 NOTES ON THE SUPERLATIVE OF ADVERBS

1 There is a difference in meaning between 'the most important meeting' and 'a most important meeting'; the former is the superlative of the adjective 'important' and is rendered in Dutch as de belangrijkste vergadering, whereas the latter is a superlative adverb qualifying the adjective 'important' and is rendered een hoogst belangrijke vergadering.

2 Minder/minst are commonly used before adjectives in this way too.

Dit is een minder interessant boek dan dat.
This is a less interesting book than that.
Maar dit boek is het minst interessante.
But this book is the least interesting.
In the written language the following adverbial superlatives occur which are not translatable as such into English:

- Ik zou dat ten zeerste betreuren.
  I would regret that very much.
- Dat is ten strengste verboden.
  That is strictly forbidden.
- Het moet ten spoedigste worden afgelast.
  It must be delivered immediately.
- Hij heeft het ten stelligste ontkend.
  He flatly denied it.

Also: laatst, op het laatst — at last, in the end.

5 In the written language the following adverbial superlatives occur which are not translatable as such into English:

- Ik zou dat ten zeerste betreuren.
  I would regret that very much.
- Dat is ten strengste verboden.
  That is strictly forbidden.
- Het moet ten spoedigste worden afgelast.
  It must be delivered immediately.
- Hij heeft het ten stelligste ontkend.
  He flatly denied it.

These adverbs, particularly the first three, are very commonly used in the spoken language (but may be written also) to intensify adjectives and other adverbs. They must never be inflected when occurring before attributive adjectives,

- een ontzettend leuke jurk
  an awfully nice dress
- een verschrikkelijk lief kind
  a terribly nice child
- een afschuweilig frutielijk gezicht
  a horribly ugly face

Ontzettelijk is rather a modern word and is increasing in popularity. 
Similarly the word enorm is very in at the moment. (see also reuse, p. 88)

- een enorm duur gebouw
  a tremendously expensive building
- ik heb enorm veel verkocht
  I sold an enormous amount

10.2.3 especially

- bijzonder (pronounced and often written biezonder/bizonder)

exceptional(ly)

- buittengewoon

too

- te

much too

- veel te (colloquially veel te)

One should take care with English 'especially': when it is used as an adjectival or adverbial intensifier in the above sense bijzonder is the appropriate word.

It was not especially (particularly) interesting.

Het was niet bijzonder interessant.

Not, however, in 'especially when it rains' or 'especially in summer' etc. when vooral is required, eg. vooral wanneer het regent, vooral's zomers.

10.3 Adverbs of time

10.3.1 It is good style in Dutch to begin clauses with adverbs of time. It is particularly advisable to do this when there are also adverbs of manner and place in the same clause. Dutch insists on the order Time, Manner, Place whereas English usually has the reverse order.

He goes to school by bus every day.

P M T

Hij gaat iedere dag met de bus naar school.

T M P

By beginning clauses with time in Dutch, one then needs only concentrate on putting manner and place in the correct order.

Iedere dag gaat hij met de bus naar school.
Notice that if one begins the clause with time, inversion of subject and verb takes place.

Only statements can begin with time, never questions where the verb must be first.

Kom je morgen met de fiets of de tram?

The only exceptions to time always preceding manner and place are the short commonly occurring adverbs, er, hier and daar. Er (unemphatic 'there') always precedes time and hier and daar can stand at the beginning of the clause for emphasis and thus precede time; otherwise they follow time usually. (see p. 97)

Ik ben er al geweest. (only possible order)
Daar ben ik al geweest./Ik ben al daar geweest.
Hier heb ik vanochtend brood gekocht./Ik heb vanochtend hier brood gekocht./Vanochtend heb ik hier brood gekocht.

10.3.2 When there are two expressions of time in a clause, the less definite always precedes the more definite.

Ik get up at 10.00 a.m. every Sunday.
Ik sta iedere zondag om tien uur op./Iedere zondag sta ik om tien uur op.
He always reads till midnight.
Hij leest altijd tot middernacht./Altijd leest hij tot middernacht.

10.3.3 Note that in the above English sentence the adverb of time occurs between the subject and the finite verb. This is very common in English but must not be copied in Dutch.

He seldom rings me up.
Hij belt me zelden op.
He never gave me the book.
Hij heeft me het boek nooit gegeven.

10.3.4 When an expression of time occurs in a sentence with a nominal direct object, it precedes the object, not however, when the object is a pronoun.

Julie moet vanavond dit hoofdstuk lezen.
You must read this chapter tonight.
but
Julie moet het vanavond lezen.
Ik heb hem gisteren het boek gegeven.
I gave him the book yesterday.

Note, however, that this problem can be avoided by beginning with time.

Vanavond moeten jullie dit hoofdstuk lezen.
Gisteren heb ik hem het boek gegeven.

The same commonly occurs with an expression of place.

Hij zat in de tuin een boek te lezen.
Zij zag overal vreemde dingen.

10.3.5 Do not let the word order in co-ordinate clauses containing an adverb of time confuse you.

Gisteren is hij naar Amsterdam gevlogen maar morgen komt hij terug.
Remember that the co-ordinating conjunctions en, of, want and maar do not affect the word order. Thus, in this example, morgen is taken as the first idea and consequently inversion of subject and verb takes place. A stylistic variant of the above is:

Hij is gisteren naar Amsterdam gevlogen maar (hij) komt morgen terug.

10.3.6 There can be a slight difference in the word order in subordinate clauses too.

Zij ging vroeg naar bed, omdat ze die dag een lange wandeling had gemaakt.
The only possible place for the adverb is after the subject. This is not the case in English.

She went to bed early because that day she had gone for a long walk or because she had gone for a long walk that day.

10.3.7 Note the presence or absence of 'for' in expressions of time.

a Voor hoe lang ga je? Ik ga (voor) twee weken naar toe.
How long are you going for? I'm going there for two weeks.

b Ik ben er twee weken geweest./Ik was er twee weken.
I was there for two weeks.

c Ik woon hier al twee weken.
I have been living here for two weeks.

a voor (when in the future, but can also be omitted in such cases)
b nothing (when in the past)
c al (when in the past in English but lasting up till the present with the verb in the present in Dutch, see p. 121, 122)
Ik woon er/hier/daar al twee weken.
but
Ik woon al twee weken in Amsterdam.
Ik wacht al twee uur op je.

Days of the week
on Sundays
on Mondays
on Tuesdays
on Wednesdays
on Thursdays
on Fridays
on Saturdays
on Sunday etc. (past and coming)
the Sunday after etc.
Sunday morning, afternoon, evening/night
on Sunday evenings etc.
by Sunday
next Sunday etc.
last Sunday etc.
from Sunday (on) etc.
on working days
on holidays

Yesterday, today, tomorrow etc.
yesterday
yesterday morning, afternoon etc.
yesterday evening or last night
day before yesterday
morning of the day before yesterday etc.
today
today
from today on
this morning, afternoon etc.
tonight (after midnight),
last night (after midnight)

's zondags
(or op zondagen etc.)
's maandags
dinsdags
's woensdags
donderdags
vrijdags
zaterdags
(op) zondag
de zondag daarna etc.
zondagochtend, -morgen, -middag, -avond
op zondagavond etc.
vóór zondag
aanstaande/volgende/komende zondag etc.
vorige/verleden/afgelopen zondag
vanaf zondag etc.
op werkdagen
op feestdagen

tomorrow
tomorrow morning
tomorrow afternoon, evening/night
day after tomorrow

Periods of the day
in the morning(s)
in the afternoon(s)
in the evening(s)
at night
during the day
late in the evening
early in the morning
at lunch-time
at one o'clock in the morning

Weekend
this/next weekend
last weekend
at the weekend

Seasons
next summer, winter, autumn, spring
last summer etc.
this summer etc. (i.e. both past and coming)
in summer
in winter
in autumn
in spring

Now
now
now
from now on
until now, up to now

Note the word order with *al twee weken* constructions:
Ik woon er/hier/daar al twee weken.
but
Ik woon al twee weken in Amsterdam.
Ik wacht al twee uur op je.

Note:
*gister(en)*
gisterochtend, -morgen, -middag
Note: *gisteravond*
eergisteren
eergisterochtend, -middag etc.

*vandaag*
heden (lit.)
vanaf vandaag
vanochtend, -morgen, -middag, -avond
Note: *vannacht*

*morgen*
morgenochtend (not morgenmorgen)
morgenmiddag, -avond
overnorgen

's morgens
's ochtends
's middags
's avonds
's nachts
overlag
's avonds laat
's ochtends vroeg
tussen de middag
om een uur 's ochtends/in de ochtend

dit/volgend/komend weekend
vorig/verleden/afgelopen weekend
in het weekend/weekende

volgende/aanstaande/komende zomer, winter, herfst, lente
vorige/verleden/afgelopen zomer etc.
van de zomer etc.

's zomers, in de zomer
's winters, in de winter
in de herfst, in het najaar
in de lente, in het voorjaar

thans (lit.)
nu (colloquial nou)
van nu af aan, vanaf nu, voortaan
tot nu toe, tot nog toe, tot dusver,
tot op de dag van vandaag
nowadays
now and then, every so often

Hour
for hours
hours ago
two hours ago
in two hours' time

Day
one day, morning, evening etc.
that day, morning, evening etc.
the day after
the next day
the day before
all day, evening, night etc.
for days
days ago
one of these days
(on) the same day
once/twice a day
daily
the day after (that)

Week
this week
next week
last week
in a week, in a week’s time
in a fortnight, in a fortnight’s time
within a week
a week ago
a fortnight ago
Friday week, a week from Friday
during the week, on weekdays

Month
this month
next month
last month
from next month (on)
in a month's time
within a month
a month ago
for months
once a month
the month after
at the beginning of January
in the middle of January
at the end of January
in June

Year
this year
from this year (on)
next year
last year
in two years’ time
two years ago
years ago
the last three years
all year long/through
the year after
once a year

de week daarop
de hele week (door)
vanaf volgende week
eén keer in de week/per week
twee keer in de week/per week etc.
on de andere week
deze maand, van de maand
vorige/verleden/afgelopen maand
over een maand
binnen een maand
maandenlang, maanden achtereen (formal)
eén keer in de maanden/per maand
de maand daarop
begin januari
midden januari
half januari
 medio januari
eind januari
in juni

dit jaar
vanaf dit jaar
volgend/komend jaar
vorig/verleden/afgelopen jaar
over twee jaar
twee jaar geleden
jaren geleden
jaren her (lit.)
de afgelopen drie jaar
het hele jaar door
het jaar daarop
eén keer per/jen jaar

Note: jaar always in singular after numerals.
Holidays

on public holidays
at Christmas time
at Easter
at Whitsuntide

GENERAL

always
still
not yet
still not
for good
for ever (and ever)
seldom
ever
mostly
sometimes
now and again
meanwhile

often
more often
usually
usually, generally
recently
lately

at the latest
at the latest, not later than
at the earliest
late

op feestdagen
met Kerst
met Pasen
met Pinksteren

always
steeds
nog
nog altijd
nog steeds
nog niet
nog steeds niet
voor altijd
voor goed
voor eeuwig (en altijd)
zelden
ooit
nooit
nimmer
meestal
soms
af en toe
intussen
in de tussentijd
ondertussen
inmiddels
vaak
dikwijls
vaker (see p. 93)
gewoonlijk
doorgaans
onlangs
kort geleden
laatst
de laatste tijd
op z'n laatst
uiterlijk
op z'n vroegst
te laat

in the future
henceforth
in the course of time
in due course
high time
for the time being, provisionally
temporarily
since, since then
of old
from way back
from a child
from childhood

ADVERBS OF TIME WITH ALTERNATIVE TRANSLATIONS IN DUTCH

Afterwards

afterwards, after
afterwards, after that
afterwards, later
shortly afterwards

Again

again
(yet) again
(once) again
again and again

Already

already
already

in de toekomst
vervolgens
in het vervolg
op den duur
na verloop van tijd
metertijd
te zijner tijd
hoog tijd
de hoogste tijd
voorlopig
tijdelijk
sindsdien
sederdien (lit.)
van ouds (her)
vant kindsbeen af

toen, daarna, naderhand
nadien (lit.)
later
kort daarna

weer
alweer
opnieuw
steeds weer
telkens (weer)

al
(al)reeds (lit.)
Before

before, earlier, formerly, previously (never) before
before that
as never before

Finally

finally
finally, at last, eventually
finally, at the end

tenslotte\(^1\)
eindelijk
op 't laatst
ten laatste (following ten eerste, ten tweede etc.)

Firstly

firstly
firstly (followed by secondly, thirdly etc.)
first (as in 'show me the letter first', i.e. before you send it)
at first

eerst
voor 't eerst
ten eerste
van tevoren
in het begin

Immediately

immediately

onzelfdikker meteen

In a moment

as in 'I'll do it in a moment'

zo meteen
straks
dadelijk
zo
direkt

Soon

soon
soon, quickly
soon afterwards
soon, shortly
sooner
sooner or later

Note: I'll do it soon (see 'in a moment').

Then

then
then (past tense)
then, at that time
dan
toen
toenertijd
inderfiid

Note: Dan can occur in sentences in both the past and present tenses.

Ze waren van plan geweest om elkaar in de stad te ontmoeten. Ze wilden dan...

Here the verb is in the past but the action is not. It did not occur.

Compare:

Ze hebben elkaar in de stad ontmoet. Toen gingen ze...

Toen means one occasion. The word altijd (repeated occasions) necessitates the use of dan in the following sentence, even if the verb is in the past.

Ik keek altijd eerst naar het nieuws en dan las ik de krant.

Compare the use of wanneer when the verb is in the past. (see p. 195)

Time

at the same time
tegelijk
tegelijkertijd
terzelfdertijd
tevens

een tijd(ge) geleden
een tijdje, poosje
evenijes
de hele tijd
(al) lang
(stipt) op tijd
bijtijds

at the same time, as well as
een tijd(ge) geleden
een tijdje, poosje
evenijes
de hele tijd
(al) lang
(stipt) op tijd
bijtijds

some time ago
een tijd(ge) geleden
een tijdje, poosje
evenijes
de hele tijd
(al) lang
(stipt) op tijd
bijtijds

a little while
een tijdje, poosje
evenijes
de hele tijd
(al) lang
(stipt) op tijd
bijtijds

all the time
de hele tijd
(al) lang
(stipt) op tijd
bijtijds

for a long time
de hele tijd
(al) lang
(stipt) op tijd
bijtijds

(exactly) on time
de hele tijd
(al) lang
(stipt) op tijd
bijtijds

once, one time
een keer, eenmaal

\(^1\) tenslotte also means 'after all'

\(^2\) pas also means 'only' and 'not until'; snit does not usually mean 'just', only zojuist does
Similarly

daarop
daarin
daarachter
erop
erin
erachter

hier en daar, her en der

links
rechts
linksaan
echteraf
naar links
naar rechts
die/dieze kant op/uit

in het midden
rechtstuur
verderop
naar voren (toe)
naar achteren (toe)
voorin
voorop
vooruit
achterin
achterop
achteraan

(see p. 221)

boven
beneden
naar boven, de trap op
naar beneden, de trap af

bovenop, bovenaan
onderin

binnen, binnenshuis
buiten, buitenshuis
naar binnen

on that/those
in that/those
behind that/those etc.
on it/them
in it/them
behind it/them (see p. 236)

here and there

on the left
on the right
(tum) left
(tum) right
to the left
to the right
that way, this way

in the middle
straight ahead
further on
forward, ahead
back(wards)
in the front
up (on) the front
at the head
in the back
on the back
at the end

upstairs
downstairs
(to) upstairs
(to) downstairs

at the top (of)
at the bottom (of)

inside
outside
(to) inside

twee-maal
eaan paar keer
enige malen (formal)
devorige keer
devolgende keer
dezes dit keer
twee keer per/op een dag

in de loop der tijd
op den daar
na verloop van tijd

10.4 Adverbs of place and direction

It will be noticed that in many of the groups set out below there is a form with and without the preposition naar. In English there is usually one word to express both place and motion towards a place; in the latter case Dutch must express the motion with naar after verbs of motion.

When is he coming here?
She went outside.
They went upstairs.

hier
daar
er

hiervandaan, van hier
daarvandaan, van daar
hiernaartoe
daarernaartoe

hiernaast
hierop
hierin
hierachter

On that/those
in that/those
behind that/those etc.
on it/them
in it/them
behind it/them
10.5 Interrogative adverbs (*vragende bijwoorden*)

Interrogative adverbs are those particles that introduce questions, asking when, where, how and why etc. (see also Interrogative pronouns, p. 72). For interrogative adverbs in indirect questions see p. 203.

- *waarom* why
- *wanneer* when
- *sinds* since when
- *hoe* how
- *hoelang* how long
- *waar* where
- *waar... naartoe/heen* where... to
- *waar... vandaan* where... from

10.5.1 *Hoe* sometimes renders English ‘what’, eg. What is your name? — Hoe is je naam? Hoe heet je? Also the question ‘what is the date?’ is *de hoeveelste is het vandaag*? *Hoe* is often followed by other adverbs as in English.

- *hoe vaak* — how often; *hoe veel* — how much/many

Note the interrogative clause *Hoe komt het dat je...?* ‘How is it you...?’

10.5.2 Whenever *waar* occurs in a question with a verb of motion designating direction to or from a place, Dutch must use the compounds *waar...naartoe/heen* or *waar...vandaan*.

- *Waar woont u?* but *Waar gaat u naartoe?*
- *Waar komt hij vandaan?*

10.6 Adverbial conjunctions (*bijwoordelijke voegwoorden*)

See p. 199, 203.
10.7 Formation of adverbs

-s  The addition of a final -s in various combinations is one of the main characteristics of adverbial formation:

heelmuids  unscathed, without a scratch
(te)vergeefs  in vain

The op z'n noun +s constructions are still productive.

op z'n Hollands  as the Dutch do, à la hollandaise
op z'n Wims  as Wim does
op z'n janboerefluitjes  higgledy-piggledy

-jes  There is also a group of adverbial diminutives that are very commonly used in the spoken language. Some are permissible in the written language too (marked *). This ending is still productive. (see p. 48)

eventjes*  just a moment
frisjes*  coolish
gezelligjes  cosily, cosily
kalmjes (aan)*  calmly
knusjes*  cosily, snugly
losjes*  loosely
netjes*  nicely, nicely
slapjes*  weak, gutless
stiekempjes  secretly
stillejes*  quietly
strakjes  in a moment, soon
zachtjes*  quietly, gently

-gewijs  (rather literary; basic meaning something like 'according to', 'by')

groepsgewijs  in groups
steekproefsgewijs  by taking random samples
verhoudingsgewijs  relatively, proportionately

-halve  (more common in literature; basic meaning 'for the sake of')

gemakshalve  for convenience ('s sake)
volledigheidshalve  for the sake of completeness
veiligheidshalve  for safety's sake

-lijks  No longer productive. Actually another adverbial -s suffixed to the adjectival ending -lijk. Found only in the words dagelijks (daily), maandelijk (monthly), jaarlijks (yearly). All these words are also used as adjectives: eg. ons dagelijks brood — our daily bread.

-ings  No longer productive.

blindelings  blindly
beurteleings  in haste
ijlings  astride
schriftings 

-waarts  Comparable to English -ward(s) and still productive.

bergopwaarts  uphill
bergafwaarts  downhill
stroomopwaarts  upstream
stroomafwaarts  downstream
huiswaarts  home, homeward
stadwaarts  towards the city

-weg  This is quite a common ending for making adverbs of certain adjectives and is still productive to a degree, particularly in the spoken language.

brutaalweg  coolly, barefacedly
domweg  (quite) simply
gewoonweg  (quite) simply
kortweg  in short
pakweg  about, approximately, say

3 It will be noticed that these words are occasionally used as predicative adjectives, eg. Hij ziet er netjes uit. — You look nice (i.e. nicely dressed).
Dutch verbs can be weak, strong, mixed or irregular; modal auxiliary verbs and zijn and hebben belong to separate categories.

Weak verbs are simply regular verbs, the term 'weak' having been invented by Jacob Grimm and being peculiar to Germanic languages. Weak verbs are those that form their past tenses by the addition of a dental suffix, as is the case in English: compare worked — werkte, gewerkt.

Strong verbs. Colloquially strong verbs are often referred to as irregular verbs, but strictly speaking there is a difference between strong and irregular verbs. Strong verbs are those belonging to the seven original ablaut series common to all Germanic languages, i.e. they follow one of seven basic patterns (see p. 116). Irregular verbs, on the other hand, are those that show irregularities that are at odds with the seven ablaut series (see p. 136). Elsewhere the term 'mixed verb' is used to describe those verbs which have a strong past participle and a weak imperfect (see p. 136). Strong verbs form their present tense exactly as weak verbs.

Only in the past tenses does it become obvious whether a verb is strong. All strong verbs have in common (a) a change in the vowel of the stem in the imperfect and/or the past participle and (c) all past participles end in -en.

Tense. The various tenses or 'times of action' of both weak and strong verbs will be looked at one by one in the following chapter. The complicated issue of tense is twofold: firstly it entails the formation of the various tenses and secondly the use of those tenses. The two are dealt with separately here.

11.1 Formation of tenses

11.1.1 PRESENT TENSE (de onvoltooid tegenwoordige tijd — o.t.t.)

With the exception of komen, zijn, hebben and the modals, all verbs are regular in the present tense and the irregularities of strong verbs will only emerge in the past tenses.

Example: werken — to work

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 ik werkte</td>
<td>1 wij werken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 jij werkt</td>
<td>2 jullie werken, werkt (lit.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 hij, zij, het werkt</td>
<td>3 zij werken</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The interrogative is formed simply by inverting the subject and the object, e.g. Ik werk — I work, I am working, I do work; werk ik? — Am I working?, do I work?

The jij form drops its -t when inversion occurs, e.g. jij werkt but werk jij?

Note that the present progressive or continuous tense (i.e. I am running etc.) is not rendered in Dutch. (for exceptions see p. 165)

Rules for the formation of the present tense of all verbs (i.e. weak and strong)

The plural is always identical to the infinitive; the singular is formed by isolating the stem of the verb and then adding -t to the second and third persons; the first person singular and the stem are always identical. The rules that apply for the spelling of the stem are the same as for the plural of nouns and the inflection of adjectives, but are in reverse, i.e. the -en ending of the infinitive is dropped and the phonetics of Dutch cause certain consonants to be written singularly instead of double, certain vowels to be written double instead of singularly, and v and z to be written f and s.

Examples:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>liggen — to lie</th>
<th>lopen — to walk</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ik lig</td>
<td>wij liggen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jij ligt</td>
<td>jullie liggen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hij ligt</td>
<td>zij liggen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>geloven — to believe</td>
<td>reizen — to travel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ik geloof</td>
<td>wij geloven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jij gelooft</td>
<td>jullie geloven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hij gelooft</td>
<td>zij geloven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ik reis</td>
<td>wij reizen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jij reist</td>
<td>jullie reizen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hij reist</td>
<td>zij reizen</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 Nowadays the form in -en is usual. In Belgium gij (you), originally both a singular and a plural, is in general use and it takes the plural -t ending. This form is also found in older texts and particularly in the Bible. (see p. 53)
Sometimes, as with nouns and adjectives, a combination of these rules is applicable — see geloven above. If the stem already ends in -t, no further t is required, but if the stem ends in -d (pronounced t) then a t is added for the sake of form.

Examples:

- bijten — to bite
- rijden — to drive, ride

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st person singular</th>
<th>2nd person singular</th>
<th>3rd person singular</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ik</td>
<td>ik bijt</td>
<td>jij bijt</td>
<td>hij bijt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wij</td>
<td>wij bijten</td>
<td>jullie bijten</td>
<td>zij bijten</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jij</td>
<td>jij blijt</td>
<td>jullie blijt</td>
<td>zij blijten</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zij</td>
<td>zij blijt</td>
<td>jullie blijt</td>
<td>zij blijten</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The interrogative of jij bijt is bijtij?, whereas that of jij rijdt is rijdij?

Note: all verbs whose stem ends in -d and which have an i or ou in the stem always drop the d in the first person singular and the interrogative of the second person singular; it may be written but is never pronounced, ik rij(d), houfd); rij(d) je, houjd) je?

There are five monosyllable verbs that should be noted:

- staan — to stand
- gaan — to go
- slaan — to hit

The verb komen (to come) shows a slight irregularity in the present tense:

- ik kom (not koom) — wij komen
- jij komt — jullie komen
- hij komt — zij komen

11.1.2 IMPERFECT TENSE (de onvoltooid verleden tijd — o.v.t.)

The imperfect or simple past in English is I worked (a weak verb), I sang (a strong verb). The progressive and emphatic forms I was working, I did work are not translatable into Dutch (for exceptions see p. 165).

Weak verbs

The imperfect is formed, as in English, by the addition of a dental ending to the stem of the verb. The rules for the isolation of the stem are given above. The only difficulty with the formation of the imperfect of weak verbs in Dutch is deciding whether to add -tel/-ten or -de/-den to the stem. The two possible conjugations are as follows:

- werken — to work

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st person singular</th>
<th>2nd person singular</th>
<th>3rd person singular</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ik</td>
<td>ik werkte</td>
<td>jij werkte</td>
<td>u werkte</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wij</td>
<td>wij werkten</td>
<td>jullie werkten</td>
<td>u werkten</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jij</td>
<td>jij werkte</td>
<td>jullie werkte</td>
<td>zij werkte</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zij</td>
<td>zij, zt, het werkte</td>
<td>zij werken</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- horen — to hear

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st person singular</th>
<th>2nd person singular</th>
<th>3rd person singular</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ik</td>
<td>ik hoorde</td>
<td>jij hoorde</td>
<td>u hoorde</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wij</td>
<td>wij hoorden</td>
<td>jullie hoorden</td>
<td>u hoorde</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jij</td>
<td>jij hoorde</td>
<td>jullie hoorden</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zij</td>
<td>zij, zt, het hoorde</td>
<td></td>
<td>zj hoorden</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- zien — to see

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st person singular</th>
<th>2nd person singular</th>
<th>3rd person singular</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ik</td>
<td>ik ze</td>
<td>jij ze</td>
<td>hij ze</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wij</td>
<td>wij zien</td>
<td>jullie zien</td>
<td>zij zien</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jij</td>
<td>jij zien</td>
<td>jullie zien</td>
<td>zij zien</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zij</td>
<td>zij, zt, het zien</td>
<td></td>
<td>zj zien</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- doen — to do

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>1st person singular</th>
<th>2nd person singular</th>
<th>3rd person singular</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ik</td>
<td>ik doe</td>
<td>jij doet</td>
<td>hij doen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wij</td>
<td>wij doen</td>
<td>jullie doen</td>
<td>zij doen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jij</td>
<td>jij doet</td>
<td>jullie doen</td>
<td>zj doen</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- praatten (to talk) — praatte, praatten
- branden (to burn) — brando, brandden

Because of the tendency in ABN to drop final n's in speech the following verbal forms are all pronounced identically: praten, ik praatte, wij praatten.
Sometimes the difference between present and past tense is not evident, eg. zetten (to put):

- present tense: *ik zet, wij zetten*
- past tense: *ik zette, wij zetten* (i.e. *-ten* added to the stem *zet-*)

Verbs with *v* or *x* in the infinitive:

The rule given above that states that the decision between *-te* and *-de* is based on the final sound of the stem is in fact a slight oversimplification, but it retains its validity if one remembers this one exception: verbs such as reizen, verhuizen, geloven, leven which contain a voiced consonant in the infinitive which becomes *s* and *f* in the stem, i.e. reis, verhuis, geloof, leef add *-de/-den* to this stem, i.e. reisede, verhuisde, geloofde, leefde. The *s* and *f* in such cases are, however, pronounced voiced.

One should be careful of verbs ending in *-eren*. Those with the stress on the first *e* of this ending are of French origin and add *-de/-den* after doubling the *e* of the ending, eg. reserveren (to reserve) – reserveerde(n). Those of Dutch origin with the stress on the stem vowel do not double the *e*, eg. luisteren (to listen) – luisterde, herinneren (to remind) – herinnerde.

**Strong verbs**

There is but one form for the singular and one for the plural, eg. binden (to tie):

- ik bind
- jij bind
- hij bind
- wij binden
- jullie binden
- zij binden

One should learn both the singular and the plural (as well as the past participle) by heart because in some ablaut series the two differ. The following examples will illustrate this:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sing.</th>
<th>Plur.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. schrijven (to write)</td>
<td>schreef</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. schieten (to shoot)</td>
<td>schoot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buigen (to bend)</td>
<td>boog</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wegen (to weigh)</td>
<td>woog</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. drinken (to drink)</td>
<td>dronk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nemen (to take)</td>
<td>nam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. eten (to eat)</td>
<td>at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zitten (to sit)</td>
<td>zat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. dragen (to wear)</td>
<td>droeg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hangen (to hang)</td>
<td>hing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>slapen (to sleep)</td>
<td>sliep</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

11.1.3 **PERFECT TENSE** *(de voltooide tegenwoordige tijd – v.t.t.)*

The perfect tense is a compound tense, i.e. it is formed from an auxiliary verb (either *hebben* or *zijn*, see p. 141) plus a derivative of the verb known as the past participle. In English the imperfect and the past participle of weak verbs are identical (eg. I worked, I have worked); in Dutch they are different and must not be confused.

As for the present and imperfect tenses, Dutch does not have an equivalent of the progressive or continuous form, i.e. I have been working (for exceptions see p. 165).

**Weak verbs**

1. Formation of the past participle: as for the imperfect of weak verbs the stem of the verb must be isolated; to this *ge-* is prefixed and *-t* or *-d* is suffixed: the rules for the choice of the latter are the same as for *-te* or *-de* in the imperfect (see p. 115), eg. werken – gewerkt, horen – gehoord, reizen – gereisd, leven – geleefd.

   With the past participle, unlike the imperfect, if the stem already ends in *-t* or *-d*, no further *-t* or *-d* is added, eg. zetten – gezet, branden – gebbrand. (It is in fact impossible in Dutch to have two of the same consonant at the end of a word.)

One should be careful with verbs ending in *-eren*. These are of two types:

- a those of French origin with the stress on *-eren* and which thus double the *e* in the past participle to preserve the long vowels, eg. reserveren – gereserveerd.

- b those native Dutch words with the stress on the stem vowel which do not double the *e*, eg. luisteren – geluisterd, herinneren – herinnerd.

2. The past participle is invariable for all persons; only the auxiliary verb is conjugated, eg.

- ik heb gewerkt
- jij hebt gewerkt
- hij heeft gewerkt
- wij hebben gewerkt
- jullie hebben gewerkt
- zij hebben gewerkt

For the use of *zijn* as an auxiliary verb in the perfect tense see p. 141.

3. Those verbs beginning with any of the following unstressed prefixes do not add *ge-* (which would be yet another unstressed prefix):

   - be-,
   - er-,
   - ge-,
   - her-,
   - ont-,
   - ver-

   Examples: beloven (to promise) – beloofd, erkennen (to recognise) – erkend, geloven
(to believe) — geloofd, herhalen (to repeat) — herhaald, ontmoeten (to meet) — ontmoet, vertalen (to translate) — vertaald.

4. Past participles of weak verbs can be used as adjectives, as in English, and are inflected as normal adjectives, eg. het vertaalde boek — the translated book, de gehate man — the hated man (note spelling change).

**Strong verbs**

1. The past participle of strong verbs is formed by the prefixing of ge- to a root that may or may not have the same vowel as the stem or the imperfect (depending on the ablaut series), and the suffixing of -en. The past participles of those verbs given above, for example, are as follows:

   1. schrijven geschreven
   2. schieten geschoten
   3. drinken gedronken
   4. nemen genomen
   5. eten gegeten
   6. dragen gedaan
   7. hangen gehangen
   8. slapen geslapen

2. As for weak verbs the past participle of strong verbs in conjunction with an auxiliary verb (either hebben or zijn) is invariable.

3. As with weak verbs there are also strong verbs with the unstressed prefixes be-, er-, ge-, her-, ont- and ver-. Such verbs simply add no ge- but behave otherwise as strong verbs in the perfect, eg.:

   verdrinken (to drown) — verdrinken
   bewegen (to move) — bewogen
   ontvangen (to receive) — ontvangen

4. Past participles of strong verbs, like those of weak verbs, can be used as adjectives but there is one difference: as those all end by definition in -en, they are treated as adjectives like open, eigen and do not take an -e ending when used attributively, eg.:

   de gesloten deur — the closed door
   de geschreven brief — the written letter

When used substantively, however, they take both -e and -en, eg.:

   de betrokken(e)n — the one(s) concerned
   de verbannene(n) — the exiled one(s)

**11.1.4 PLUPERFECT TENSE (de voltooid verleden tijd — v.v.t.)**

The pluperfect, a compound tense like the perfect, is formed from the imperfect of an auxiliary verb (either hebben or zijn, see p. 141) plus the past participle which remains invariable. The pluperfect can be described as a 'past in the past', eg.:

   He knew that I had worked.
   Hij wist dat ik gewerkt had.
   We had drunk enough.
   Wij hadden genoeg gedronken.
   He had gone home.
   Hij was naar huis gegaan.

**11.1.5 FUTURE TENSE (de onvoltooid tegenwoordig toekomende tijd — o.t.t.t.)**

1. The auxiliary used for the future tense which corresponds to English 'will' is the verb zullen; it is not the verb willen although these are occasions when an English non-temporal 'will' is translated by willen (see p. 153). Zullen is conjugated like a modal verb (singular — zal, plural — zullen) and can have modal as well as temporal qualities (see p. 124, 153). The future tense of all verbs is formed by the use of zullen plus the infinitive of the verb concerned; this infinitive is sent to the end of the clause, eg.:

   Ik zal het brengen. — I will bring it.
   Wij zullen hem zien. — We will see him.

2. The future can also be rendered by the verb gaan instead of zullen, as is the case in English, eg. I am going to buy a house tomorrow (i will...) Ik ga morgen een huis kopen. Is it going to rain? (i.e. will it rain?) Gaat het regenen? Never use this gaan with komen.

3. A third possible way of rendering the future, which also has a parallel in English, is by using the simple present tense, eg. He is buying a new car soon. (i.e. he will...) Hij koopt binnenkort een nieuwe auto. He is flying to Amsterdam tomorrow. (i.e. he will...) Hij vliegt morgen naar Amsterdam.

**11.1.6 FUTURE PERFECT TENSE (de voltooid tegenwoordig toekomende tijd — v.v.t.t.)**

The future perfect in Dutch corresponds exactly to that in English, eg. he will have
done it — hij zal het gedaan hebben (or hebben gedaan), she will have gone home —

Note that the auxiliary ‘have’ is rendered by either hebben or zijn depending on which auxiliary the main verb normally takes in the perfect and pluperfect tenses, i.e. hij heeft het gedaan, zij is naar huis gegaan.

11.1.7 CONDITIONAL TENSE (de onvoltooid verleden toekomende tijd — o.v.t.t.)

1 The conditional can be described as the past in the future. It is the tense that employs ‘would + infinitive’ in English. Just as English uses the past tense of its future auxiliary ‘will’ to form the conditional, so Dutch employs the past tense of zullen, i.e. singular — zou, plural — zouden. (The gij form is zoudt but is often used with u, particularly in inverted constructions to facilitate pronunciation, eg. zoudt u dat willen?)

(If...), she would believe him.
(Als...), zou zij hem geloven.
They would buy it, (if...) Zij zouden het kopen (als...)

2 Zouden) is also used in Dutch to express ‘was/were going to’, eg. I was going to go to Germany last year but... — ik zou vorig jaar naar Duitsland gaan maar...

3 There is one English ‘would’ which is not conditional in meaning and should not be translated with zouden), i.e. the one that means ‘used to’, eg. When I lived in Amsterdam I would often visit my aunt in Rotterdam — toen ik in Amsterdam woonde, heb ik (of bezocht ik) vaak mijn tante in Rotterdam bezocht.

4 A ‘should’ which means ‘would’ is rendered by zou (den) but otherwise by a form of moeten (see p. 152), eg. I should do it if I were you — ik zou het doen als ik jou was.

11.1.8 CONDITIONAL PERFECT TENSE (de voltooid verleden toekomende tijd — v.v.t.t.)

The conditional perfect is the past of the future perfect,

He would have seen it.  
Hij zou het gezien hebben (or hebben gezien).  
She would have gone.  
Zij zou gegaan zijn (or zijn gegaan).  
They would have shown it to me.  
Zij zouden het mij hebben laten zien.

Contracted conditional perfects:

Because the conditional perfect employs two auxiliaries (zou/zouden + hebben/zijn) in addition to one or two infinitives, there is a tendency to contract the auxiliaries into one form, i.e. as in German hätte und wäre. This is actually a remnant of the former imperfect subjunctive although the forms are identical to the imperfect of hebben and zijn nowadays.

hij zou het gezien hebben — hij had het gezien (als...)  
hij zou gegaan zijn — hij was gegaan (als...)  
hij zou het mij hebben laten zien — hij had het mij laten zien (als...)

Confusion with the imperfect is usually avoided by context, i.e. there is always an ‘if’ clause preceding, following or implied.

Although it is not compulsory to contract, in cases like the third example where there are four verbs, it is preferable to reduce the number to three by such contraction. (For further verbal contractions see modal verbs.)

11.2 Use of tenses

11.2.1 PRESENT TENSE

The present tense is used as in English with the following exceptions:

1 Dutch has its own idiomatic way of expressing the present continuous (i.e. he is reading a book, see p. 165) and the emphatic present (i.e. he does like fish, see p. 166).

2 The present tense is used even more extensively in Dutch than in English to express the future; it is in fact the most usual way of expressing the future. (see p. 119)

3 An English perfect followed by ‘for’ plus an expression of time is rendered by the present tense in Dutch as the action of the verb is seen not to have been completed but still continuing into the present,

I have been living here for ten years.  
Ik woon hier al tien jaar.

A similar construction is required in sentences introduced by ‘how long’,

How long has he been learning Dutch?  
Hoe lang heeft hij al Nederlands?  
(see p. 97)
11.2.2 IMPERFECT TENSE

1 Some confusion about when to use the imperfect arises because of the common practice in Dutch of using the perfect where English uses the imperfect (see Perfect tense). The real difficulty associated with use of the imperfect in Dutch is in recognizing the few occasions when it cannot be replaced by the perfect. It is also particularly difficult to give rules for when it must be used. Generally speaking it tends to be used for narrating a series of events in the past. When mentioning isolated actions or listing a sequence of separate actions in the past, the perfect tense is normally preferred, however.

The verbs zijn and hebben are more commonly used in the imperfect than the perfect,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Wat had je in je hand?} \\
\text{What did you have in your hand?} \\
\text{Hoe was het weer die avond?} \\
\text{What was the weather like that night?}
\end{align*}
\]

The perfect would, however, not be wrong in such cases.

In the following examples hebben and zijn indicate a permanent state rather than a momentary action like zingen and doodgaan and thus they must be in the imperfect:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Zij heeft langer gezongen dan ik en zij had een mooiere stem.} \\
\text{She sang longer than I and she had a nicer voice.} \\
\text{Onze hond is net doodgegaan. Maar ja, hij was dan ook erg oud.} \\
\text{Our dog (has) just died. But then he was very old.}
\end{align*}
\]

A sentence such as 'Have you ever been to England?' containing the verb 'to be' which can be and usually is rendered literally by a perfect in Dutch, can also use an imperfect, however: Ben je ooit in Engeland geweest?/Was je ooit in Engeland?

The former sounds better, however.

The imperfect is always used after the conjunction toen (when),

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Hij lag nog in bed toen ik bij hem kwam.} \\
\text{He was still in bed when I came to him.}
\end{align*}
\]

Liggen must also be in the imperfect here as it describes a state, not an action, which was current when the action, i.e. arriving, occurred.

2 Dutch has its own idiomatic ways of expressing the imperfect continuous and emphatic, i.e. he was reading a book, he did like fish (see p. 165-166).

3 There is one imperfect in Dutch which replaces an English pluperfect.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Hij lag er al uren toen ik bij hem kwam.} \\
\text{He had been lying there for hours when I got to his place.}
\end{align*}
\]

Here, as with the present tense (see Present tense 3), the action of the first clause is seen as still continuing when the action of the second occurs and thus an imperfect must be used for the first action; a pluperfect (in Dutch) would imply that he was no longer lying there when I arrived, but that he had been lying there.

4 Two variant forms of the imperfect in English which often cause confusion are those indicating habit or custom which employ the auxiliaries 'used to' and 'would'.

We used to live in Amsterdam.
When we lived in Amsterdam we would often go to the National Museum.

In the first example the Dutch use either the imperfect or the perfect and express the habitual aspect with vroeger (earlier, formerly).

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Wij woonden vroeger in A'dam; wij hebben vroeger in A'dam gewoond.} \\
\text{We used to live in Amsterdam.} \\
\text{We used to live in Amsterdam.}
\end{align*}
\]

In the second example the conjunction toen determines the use of the imperfect in the first clause, and the 'would', which is equivalent in meaning to 'used to', is rendered as in the first example with an adverb.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Toen wij in A'dam woonden, gingen we dikwijls naar het Rijksmuseum.} \\
\text{When we lived in Amsterdam, we often went to the Rijksmuseum.}
\end{align*}
\]

Such sentences expressing habituality often employ the verb plegen (to be accustomed to) in very formal style.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Het karretje waarmee hij altijd naar de stad placht te rijden,...} \\
\text{The cart in which he would always (always used to) ride to town,...}
\end{align*}
\]

5 One should also beware of what seem to be imperfects in Dutch but which are in fact contracted conditionals (see p. 124,149).

11.2.3 PERFECT TENSE

1 It is in the use of the perfect that Dutch tenses differ most from those of English. The basic rule for the use of the perfect is as follows:

All perfects in English are rendered by perfects in Dutch (with one exception, see Present tense 3), but most imperfects in English may be rendered by imperfects or perfects in Dutch, the perfect tense being more common, particularly in speech (for the few instances where English imperfects must be imperfects in Dutch, see Imperfect tense above).

For example, the sentence 'He bought a car yesterday.' can only use an imperfect in English as the time of the action is mentioned; 'He has bought a car', without any mention of the time, is possible however. In Dutch the latter would also always use a perfect but the former could employ either an imperfect or a perfect.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Hij heeft gisteren een auto gekocht; hij kocht gisteren een auto} \\
\text{he has bought a car; he bought a car}
\end{align*}
\]

but only

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Hij heeft een auto gekocht.} \\
\text{He has bought a car.}
\end{align*}
\]
11.2.4 PUPERFECT TENSE

The pluperfect tense is used as in English (with one exception – see Imperfect tense 3).

Dutch has its own idiomatic ways of expressing the pluperfect continuous, i.e. he had been reading a book for hours (see p. 165).

11.2.5 FUTURE TENSE

The use of the future tense is very similar in Dutch and English, including the tendency to use the verb ‘to go’ - gaan and the present tense for actions in the future (see p. 119). The main notable difference is that Dutch uses the present tense more than English to express the future (see p. 119, 121).

It should be noted that English ‘will’ often does not denote a future and in such instances Dutch uses willen, not zullen (see p. 153).

11.2.6 FUTURE PERFECT TENSE

There is no difference between English and Dutch in the use of this tense except the tendency for Dutch to use zullen in a modal sense with no connotation of the future.

Dat zal in andere landen ook wel gedaan zijn.
That’s sure to have been done in other countries too.
Hij zal het zeker gedaan hebben.
He did it for sure.

11.2.7 CONDITIONAL TENSE

The conditional is used as in English except that the verb in the ‘if’ clause of a conditional sentence, which in English is often in the imperfect, can be either a conditional or an imperfect in Dutch.

Als je meer geld zou hebben (had),
If you had more money, ...
Als hij minder zou drinken (drank), ...
If he drank less, ...

By using the conditional in such instances the Dutch are trying to compensate for an historical simplification that has affected both English and Dutch, i.e. the falling together of the imperfect subjunctive with the imperfect.

Compare: If I were rich — Als ik rijk was (zou z(i)n) ...

(see p. 121)

11.2.8 CONDITIONAL PERFECT TENSE

There are no differences between English and Dutch in the use of this tense but beware of contractions (see p. 121).

11.3 Alphabetical list of strong and irregular verbs

Roman numerals refer to the class to which the verb belongs (see p. 128). The abbreviation m.v. stands for mixed verbs, i.v. for irregular verbs and mo. for modal verbs.

<p>| bakken | m.v. | dingen | III |
| barsten | m.v. | doen | i.v. |
| bedelen | III, m.v. | dragen | VI |
| bederven | III | drijven | I |
| bedrijven | II | dringen | III |
| beginnen | III | drinken | III |
| begrijpen | I | druipen | II |
| belijden | I | duiken | II |
| (op)bergen | III | duiken | II |
| bevelen | IV | duiven | mo. |
| bewegen | II | dwingen | III |
| bewijzen | I | eten | V |
| bidden | V | fluiten | II |
| bieden | II | gaan | i.v. |
| biten | I | gelen | III |
| binden | III | geven | V |
| blasen | VII | genieten | II |
| blijken | I | geven | V |
| blijven | I | geiten | II |
| blikken | III | glijden | I |
| blinden | m.v. | glimmen | III |
| braken | IV | graven | VI |
| brengen | i.v. | gripen | I |
| brouwen | m.v. | hangen | VII |
| buigen | II | hebben | i.v. |
| delven | III, m.v. | heffen | VII |
| denken | i.v. | helpen | III |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch Verb</th>
<th>Verb Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>heten</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hissen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>houden</td>
<td>VII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>houden</td>
<td>VII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jagen</td>
<td>VI, m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kiezen</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kijken</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>krijgen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>klimmen</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>klinken</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kluiten</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>knijpen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>komen</td>
<td>IV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kopen</td>
<td>i.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>krijgen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>krimpen</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kruipen</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>knappen</td>
<td>mo.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kwijten</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lachen</td>
<td>m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>laden</td>
<td>m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>laten</td>
<td>VII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lezen</td>
<td>IV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>liegen</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>liggen</td>
<td>V</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lijden</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lijken</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lopen</td>
<td>VII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>malen</td>
<td>m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>metten</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>meten</td>
<td>IV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mijden</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>moeten</td>
<td>mo.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mogen</td>
<td>mo.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nemen</td>
<td>IV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nijgen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nijpen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>onttinnen</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>overlijden</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>plegen</td>
<td>i.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pluizen</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prijzen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>raden</td>
<td>VII, m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rijden</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rijgen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rijten</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rijzen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>roepen</td>
<td>VII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ruiken</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>scheppen</td>
<td>VII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>scheiden</td>
<td>m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schelden</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schenden</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schenen</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>scheren</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schieten</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schijnen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schrijden</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schrijven</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schrikken</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schuiven</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>slaan</td>
<td>VI, i.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>slapen</td>
<td>VII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stijpen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stijgen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stinken</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stoten</td>
<td>VII, m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>strijden</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>strijken</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stuiven</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>treden</td>
<td>V</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>treffen</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trekken</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vallen</td>
<td>VII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vangen</td>
<td>VII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>varen</td>
<td>VI</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vechten</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verbieden</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verdelen</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verdrieten</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verdwijnen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verenigen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vergelijken</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vergeten</td>
<td>V</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verkezen</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verlassen</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vermijden</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verraden</td>
<td>VII</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verschuilen</td>
<td>II, m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>versluiten</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verslindan</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verwijlen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verwijgen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verzinnen</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verzwijgen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vinden</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vlechten</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vliegen</td>
<td>II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vragen</td>
<td>VI, m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vouwen</td>
<td>m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>weten</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wopen</td>
<td>m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wrijven</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wringen</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zeggen</td>
<td>i.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zenden</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zien</td>
<td>IV, i.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zieren</td>
<td>IV, i.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ziken</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zingen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zinnen</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zitten</td>
<td>V</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zoeken</td>
<td>i.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zuiten</td>
<td>m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zuilen</td>
<td>mo.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zuigen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zuilen</td>
<td>m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zwelen</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zweemen</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zweeren</td>
<td>II, m.v.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zwerven</td>
<td>III</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zwijgen</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
11.3.1 STRONG AND IRREGULAR VERBS

The numbers refer to the ablaut series to which these verbs belong historically (see p. 112, 116).

* = verbs conjugated only with zijn
* = verbs conjugated with hebben or zijn

I All verbs with *i in the stem belong in this group except for a few formed from non-verbal parts of speech, eg. benijden (to envy), berooiden (to liberate), kastijden (to chastise), verlijden (to gladden), versterken (to silt up), wijden (to consecrate, devote) etc.; these are weak.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Strong Verbs</th>
<th>Irregular Verbs</th>
<th>Strong Verbs</th>
<th>Irregular Verbs</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>spijten</td>
<td>speet</td>
<td>speten</td>
<td>gespeten</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spijten</td>
<td>speet</td>
<td>speten</td>
<td>gespeten</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stigen</td>
<td>steeg</td>
<td>stegen</td>
<td>gestegen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stijven</td>
<td>stieef</td>
<td>stieven</td>
<td>gestieven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>strijden</td>
<td>streed</td>
<td>streken</td>
<td>gestreken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>strijken</td>
<td>streek</td>
<td>streken</td>
<td>gestreken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verdwijken*</td>
<td>verdween</td>
<td>verdwienen</td>
<td>verdwienen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vergelijken</td>
<td>vergeleek</td>
<td>vergeleken</td>
<td>vergeleken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/verlijden</td>
<td>/verlmied</td>
<td>/verlmieden</td>
<td>/verlmieden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/verstrijden</td>
<td>/verlsieften</td>
<td>/verlsieften</td>
<td>/verlsieften</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/verstrijken</td>
<td>/verlwetenen</td>
<td>/verlwetnen</td>
<td>/verlwetnen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/verwijzen*</td>
<td>/verlwissen</td>
<td>/verlwissen</td>
<td>/verlwissen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wielen</td>
<td>week</td>
<td>weken</td>
<td>geweken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wijden</td>
<td>wreef</td>
<td>wreeven</td>
<td>gewreeven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zwijgen</td>
<td>zweeg</td>
<td>zweegen</td>
<td>gewzegen</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

II Not all verbs with ui and ie are irregular,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Huilen</th>
<th>Hulde, gehuld</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Spieden</td>
<td>Spiedde, gespie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Also</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bruisen (to flizz), gebruiken (to use), getuigen (to testify), kruisen (to cross), verhuisen (to shift), wiienen (to wave), geschieden (to happen), wieden (to weed) etc.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Strong Verbs</th>
<th>Irregular Verbs</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Buigen</td>
<td>Boog</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dripen</td>
<td>Droop</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duiken*</td>
<td>Dook</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fluiten</td>
<td>Float</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kluiven</td>
<td>Kloof</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knippen*</td>
<td>Kroop</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pluizien</td>
<td>Ploos</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Noiken</td>
<td>Rook</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schuiven*</td>
<td>Schoof</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sluipen</td>
<td>Sloop</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sluiten</td>
<td>Sloot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Snuiten</td>
<td>Snoot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Snuiwen</td>
<td>Snopf</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spruiten*</td>
<td>Sport</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spuiten</td>
<td>Spot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stuiven</td>
<td>Stoof</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

To be sorry
To split
To rise, climb
To stiffen
To light
To iron, lower (flag)
To disappear
To compare
To avoid
To wear (out)
To reproach
To refer, show
To yield, retreat
To rub
To be silent

To bend, bow
To drip
To dive
To whistle
To pick a bone
To crawl, creep
To give off fluff
To smell
To push, shove
To steal, sneak
To close
To blow one's nose
To sniff
To sprout
To spout, squirt
To be dusty, rush
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch Verb</th>
<th>English Verb</th>
<th>Dutch Verb</th>
<th>English Verb</th>
<th>Dutch Verb</th>
<th>English Verb</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>stofzuigen</td>
<td>to hide</td>
<td>gespugen</td>
<td>to spit</td>
<td>bedriegen</td>
<td>to deceive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zuigen</td>
<td>to suck</td>
<td>bieden</td>
<td>to offer</td>
<td>genieten</td>
<td>to enjoy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zuipen</td>
<td>to booz</td>
<td>gieten</td>
<td>to pour</td>
<td>kiezen</td>
<td>to choose</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spugen</td>
<td>to spit</td>
<td>liegen</td>
<td>to lie, tell lies</td>
<td>schieten</td>
<td>to shoot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verbieden</td>
<td>to forbid</td>
<td>verboden</td>
<td>to vax, sadden</td>
<td>verdriet</td>
<td>to verbot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verliezen</td>
<td>to lose</td>
<td>verdroten</td>
<td>to verbot</td>
<td>vlieden</td>
<td>to flood</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vliegen</td>
<td>to flood</td>
<td>vlogen</td>
<td>to fly</td>
<td>vrienten</td>
<td>to freeze</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wegen</td>
<td>to weight</td>
<td>woogen</td>
<td>to weigh</td>
<td>bewegen</td>
<td>to move</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bewegen</td>
<td>to move</td>
<td>bewogen</td>
<td>to move</td>
<td>scheren</td>
<td>to shear, shave</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zweren</td>
<td>to fester</td>
<td>zweerde</td>
<td>to fester</td>
<td>zwerden</td>
<td>to fester</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>archaic:</td>
<td>zwoor</td>
<td>zworen</td>
<td>to fester</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2 *Stofzuigen is regular, i.e. *stofzuigt*, *gespugen*.  
3 *One will hear both *ik ben mijn pen verloren* and *ik heb mijn pen verloren* with no difference in meaning. See also *vergeren*.  
4 See *group VI* for *zweren* - to swear.  
5 The related verbs *verschrikken* and *opschrikken* are regular.  
6 *Trekkken takes zijn* in various compounds, eg. *vertrekken* (to depart), *wegtrekken* (to go away).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>werven</td>
<td>to recruit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zuivering</td>
<td>to wander, roam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bevelen</td>
<td>to order, command</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>breken</td>
<td>to break</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>komen</td>
<td>to come</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nemen</td>
<td>to take</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spreken</td>
<td>to speak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>steken</td>
<td>to stab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>steln</td>
<td>to steal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bidden</td>
<td>to pray</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eten</td>
<td>to eat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>genezen</td>
<td>to heal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>geven</td>
<td>to give</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lezen</td>
<td>to read</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>liggen</td>
<td>to lie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>meten</td>
<td>to measure</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>treden</td>
<td>to tread, step</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vergeten</td>
<td>to forget</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vreten</td>
<td>to gorge, eat (of animals)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zien</td>
<td>to see</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zitten</td>
<td>to sit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dragen</td>
<td>to carry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>graven</td>
<td>to dig</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jagen</td>
<td>to chase</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jagen</td>
<td>to hunt</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

7 The criteria for the use of zijn or hebben with vergeten are different from those for other verbs marked *; when the meaning is 'to have left something behind' hebben may be used but when a fact etc. has been forgotten only zijn can be employed; in practice zijn is more commonly used in both cases. (See p. 145)

8 Slaan should not be confused with the regular verb slagen (to succeed; pass an exam). Note the past participle is geslagen, not geslaan.

9 The compound beeldhouwen (to sculpt) is weak: beeldhouwde, gebeeldhouwd.

10 Nowadays raden is only used in the meaning of to guess. To advise is rendered by aanraden which is weak.

11 There is also a regular verb scheppen (to scoop, ladle).

12 Wassen (to grow) is archaic and is usually replaced by groeien, except in standard expressions, e.g. de wassende maan – the waxing moon.
### 11.3.2 MIXED VERBS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bakken</td>
<td>bakte</td>
<td>to bake</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>barsten*</td>
<td>barstte</td>
<td>to burst</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>braden</td>
<td>braadde</td>
<td>to roast</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>brouwen</td>
<td>brouddde</td>
<td>to brew</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>heten</td>
<td>heettte</td>
<td>to be called</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>laden*</td>
<td>laadte</td>
<td>to load</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>malen</td>
<td>maalde</td>
<td>to grind</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>scheiden</td>
<td>scheidde</td>
<td>to separate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spannen</td>
<td>spande</td>
<td>to stretch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vouwen</td>
<td>vouwde</td>
<td>to fold</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>weven</td>
<td>weefde</td>
<td>to weave</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wreken</td>
<td>wreekte</td>
<td>to avenge, revenge</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zouten</td>
<td>zoutte</td>
<td>to salt</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Verbs in this sub-group also have an archaic strong imperfect. See list of strong verbs.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(be)delven</td>
<td>(be)delven</td>
<td>to (bury), dig</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>raden</td>
<td>raadde</td>
<td>to advise, guess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stoten</td>
<td>stootte</td>
<td>to push, shove</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wassen</td>
<td>wasten</td>
<td>to wash</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zweren</td>
<td>zweedten</td>
<td>to fester</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Jagen and wazen also have a weak imperfect; in the case of *jagen* the weak imperfect has a different meaning, i.e. to hunt.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>jagen</td>
<td>joeg</td>
<td>to chase</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wazen</td>
<td>woei</td>
<td>to blow (wind)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vragen</td>
<td>vroeg</td>
<td>to ask</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

### 11.3.3 IRREGULAR VERBS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>brengen</td>
<td>bracht</td>
<td>to bring</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>denken</td>
<td>dacht</td>
<td>to think</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dunken</td>
<td>docht</td>
<td>to think, seem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kopen</td>
<td>kocht</td>
<td>to buy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>plegen*</td>
<td>placht</td>
<td>to be used to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zoeken</td>
<td>zocht</td>
<td>to look for, seek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>doen</td>
<td>deed</td>
<td>to do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gaan*</td>
<td>ging</td>
<td>to go</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>slaan</td>
<td>sloeg</td>
<td>to hit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>staan</td>
<td>stond</td>
<td>to stand</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zien</td>
<td>zag</td>
<td>to see</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hebben</td>
<td>had</td>
<td>to have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>weten*</td>
<td>wist</td>
<td>to know</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>worden*</td>
<td>werd</td>
<td>to become</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zeggen</td>
<td>zei</td>
<td>to say</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zijn*</td>
<td>was</td>
<td>to be</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 11.3.4 MODAL VERBS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>durven</td>
<td>durfde</td>
<td>to dare</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>durden</td>
<td>gedurfde</td>
<td>to dare</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kunnen</td>
<td>kon</td>
<td>to be able</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>moeten</td>
<td>moest</td>
<td>to have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mogen</td>
<td>mocht</td>
<td>to be allowed to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>willen</td>
<td>wilden</td>
<td>to want to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zullen</td>
<td>zou</td>
<td>will</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

13 Note that *glimlachen* (to smile) is weak, i.e. *glimlachte*, *geglimlacht*.
14 See p. 137.
15 See p. 147.
13.4 Mixed verbs

1 Mixed is the name given to those verbs which for historical reasons have a weak imperfect and a strong past participle (or occasionally vice-versa)

   bakken (to bake) bakte, bakten, gebakken

For a complete list of such verbs see p. 134.

2 There are five verbs, delven (to dig), raden (to guess, advise), stoten (to push), wassen (to wash) and zweren (to tell), which have a strong imperfect which is now archaic (see p. 134).

   dolf dolven
   ried rieden
   stiet stieten
   wies wiesen
   zwoor zwoeren

   Also verschuilen (to hide) but its strong imperfect is not archaic.

3 Jagen (to hunt, chase) and waaien (to blow, as of the wind) and vragen (to ask) are exceptional mixed verbs as they all have a strong imperfect and a weak past participle. Jagen and waaien also have a weak imperfect.

   jagen joeg/joegen, jaagde/jaagden gejaagd
   waaien voel/woeiden, waaiten/waaitden gewaaid
   vragen vroeg/vroegen gevraagd

   It should be noted, however, that as with 'scheren', there is a difference in meaning between the weak and strong imperfects of jagen:

   joeg/jagen = chased (away); jaagde/jaagden = hunted

11.5 Irregular verbs

Colloquially the term 'irregular' is used as a synonym for 'strong' with reference to verbs. Strictly speaking, however, irregular verbs are those that show irregularities that do not follow any of the seven basic patterns of strong verbs.

There are three groups of irregular verbs:

1 those that are historically weak verbs that all show a change of vowel in the past tenses, which they have in common with strong verbs, and also a dental ending, which they have in common with weak verbs. There are only six such verbs, two of which are not used in the spoken language, i.e. dunk en and plegen (see p. 135)

All derivatives of these verbs have the same irregularities, e.g. verkopen (to sell), verplegen (to request).

There is also a verb plegen which means 'to commit' but it is a regular verb, i.e. plege/de, gepleegd.

2 there are five monosyllabic verbs that belong historically to one of the seven groups of strong verbs (except doen), but which show certain peculiarities other strong verbs don't. (see p. 114, 135)

3 there are a few isolated verbs that follow no particular pattern at all. (see p. 115, 135)

Zeggen has a singular form zeide which is occasionally found in literature. Compounds of zeggen are regular, however.

   ontzeggen (to deny) ontzegde
   opzeggen (to recite; cancel) zegde... op

11.6 Hebben – to have

11.6.1 FORMS OF HEBBEN

The verb hebben shows several irregularities that the other irregular and strong verbs don't.

Present tense:

   ik heb
   jij hebt
   hij heeft
   u hebt, heeft
   zij hebben

The gij form is hebt.

As with zijn, u can take a second or third person verb; both are equally common.

Jullie hebben is more common than jullie hebt.

   Imperfect tense:
   singular: had
   plural: hadden

   Perfect tense:
   ik heb gehad etc. – I have had
   ik had gehad – I had had

   Future tense:
   ik zal hebben – I will have
Future perfect tense:  
*ik zal gehad hebben* — I will have had

Conditional tense:  
*ik zou hebben* — I would have
(or contracted to *ik had*, see p. 124)

Conditional perfect tense:  
*ik zou gehad hebben* — I would have had
(or contracted to *ik had gehad*, see p. 121)

Imperative:  
*heb!*

The imperative forms *heb* u and *hebben* jullie exist but are not common, as indeed is the imperative of *hebben* as a whole.

Subjunctive:  
The third person of the present subjunctive occurs in certain standard expressions, eg. *God hebbe zijn ziel.* — (May) God rest his soul.

Occasionally in literature the past subjunctive is also met — *hadde*.

11.6.2 USES OF *HEBBEN*

1. For *hebben* as an auxiliary verb in perfect tenses see p. 117, 140.

2. The following expressions employ the verb 'to be' in English but *hebben* in Dutch.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch Expression</th>
<th>English Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>dienst hebben</em></td>
<td>be on duty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>dorst hebben</em></td>
<td>be thirsty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>(ongelijk) hebben</em></td>
<td>to be (wrong) right</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>geLuK hebben</em></td>
<td>to be in luck</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>haast hebben</em></td>
<td>to be in a hurry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>honger hebben</em></td>
<td>to be hungry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>pech hebben</em></td>
<td>to be unlucky</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>slaap hebben</em></td>
<td>to be sleepy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>vakantie hebben</em></td>
<td>to be on holidays</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>vrij hebben</em></td>
<td>to be off (from work)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note: to be very hungry etc. — *erg honger hebben*

to be not hungry etc. — *geen honger hebben*

11.7 Zijn — to be

11.7.1 FORMS OF THE VERB ZIJN

The verb 'to be', as in all European languages, is extremely irregular.

| Present tense: | 1 *ik ben* — I am                           |
|               | 2 *jij bent* — you are etc.                  |
|               | *u bent* is                                    |
|               | 3 *hij is*                                     |

The *gij* form, which is common in Belgium, is *gij zijt*.

U can take a second or third person verb but *bent* is more common.

Jullie zijn is more common than *jullie bent*.

| Imperfect tense: | 1 *ik was* — I was                           |
|                 | 2 *jij was* — you were etc.                    |
|                 | *u was*                                        |
|                 | 3 *hij was*                                     |

The *gij* form is *waart*.

| Perfect tense: | 1 *ik ben geweest* — I have been              |
|               | *jij bent geweest* — you have been etc.       |

There is an adjective formed from the past participle but it is strong in form: eg. *de gewezen burgemeester* — the former mayor.

| Pluperfect tense: | 1 *ik was geweest* — I had been               |
|                  | 2 *jij was geweest* — you had been etc.       |

| Future tense: | 1 *ik zal zijn* — I will be                   |
|               | 2 *jij zult zijn* — you will be etc.          |

| Future perfect tense: | 1 *ik zal geweest zijn* — I will have been    |
|                       | 2 *jij zult geweest zijn* — you will have been etc. |

| Conditional tense: | 1 *ik zou zijn* (or contracted to *ik was*, see p. 124) — I would be |
|                    | 2 *jij zou zijn* (or contracted to *jij was*) — you would be etc. |

*Hij zou rijk zijn als hij gewerkt had* he would be rich if *hij was rijk als hij gewerkt had* he had worked
Conditional perfect tense:
1. *ik zou geweest zijn* (or contracted to *ik was geweest*)
   - I would have been
2. *jij zou geweest zijn* (or contracted to *jij was geweest*)
   - you would have been etc.

Note: One often hears *dat had leuk geweest* but in such cases the conditional perfect of *kunnen* is actually implied, i.e. *dat had leuk kunnen wezen*.

Imperative:
In the imperative a derivative of the second infinitive *wezen* is used as for the past participle and the imperfect.
*wees!* — for all persons

*weg wezen* — be off with you

Subjunctive:
Subjunctive forms of ‘to be’ are still found in some standard expressions:
*God zij dank!* — Thank God!
*als het ware* — as it were

Notes on *wezen*

*Wezen*, which was originally a synonym of *zijn*, is used nowadays (other than in the imperative as described above) in two ways:

to replace *zijn* when the latter stands in the infinitive
*het zou erg leuk kunnen wezen* — it could be really nice
*weg wezen* — be off with you

to replace *zijn* in double infinitive constructions (i.e. functions in fact as a past participle). (see p. 156)
*ik ben wezen kijken* — I have been to look
*hij is wezen vissen* — he has been fishing

This is the only legitimate use of *wezen* and it cannot be replaced by *zijn* in such cases.

11.7.2 USES OF THE VERB *ZIJN*

*Zijn* as an auxiliary verb in compound tenses

Many verbs in Dutch, unlike in English, employ the verb ‘to be’ as the auxiliary in compound tenses:

- I have bought a car.  
  *Ik heb een auto gekocht.*
- He has gone home.  
  *Hij is naar huis gegaan.*
- They had fallen over.  
  *Ze waren omgevallen.*

Verbs that denote a change from one position or state to another belong to this category.

- *komen* (to come), *vallen* (to fall), *stijgen* (to rise)

Denote a motion from one point to another.

- *worden* (to become), *sterven* (to die), *groeien* (to grow)

Denote a change from one state or another.

It is not always immediately evident, however, that the verbs concerned imply a change of position or state.

The verbs in this group are all intransitive (for exceptions see p. 143, 144).

Both weak and strong verbs can be conjugated with *zijn*. This raises another problem: most Dutch-English dictionaries and grammars will indicate in the list of strong verbs (see p. 128) whether those verbs take *zijn* in their compound tenses, but as weak verbs are never listed, those weak verbs that take *zijn* are more difficult to isolate and learn. For this reason the list given below is incomplete.

11.8.1 The following verbs always take *zijn* in the perfect, pluperfect, future perfect and conditional perfect tenses:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>Perfect</th>
<th>Pluperfect</th>
<th>Future Perfect</th>
<th>Conditional Perfect</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>vallen</em> (to fall)</td>
<td><em>ik ben gevallen</em></td>
<td><em>ik was gevallen</em></td>
<td><em>ik zal gevallen zijn</em></td>
<td><em>ik zou gevallen zijn</em>/<em>ik was gevallen</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
It is impossible to give a complete list but the following will suffice to give an indication of the sort of verb that takes *zijn*:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>barsten</th>
<th>to burst</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>beginnen</td>
<td>to start</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>blijken</td>
<td>to appear</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>blijven</td>
<td>to remain, stay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dalen</td>
<td>to descend</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>doorschieten</td>
<td>to go to seed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>emigreren</td>
<td>to emigrate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gaan</td>
<td>to go</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gebeuren</td>
<td>to happen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>geschieden</td>
<td>to happen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>groeien</td>
<td>to grow</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>immigreren</td>
<td>to immigrate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>komen</td>
<td>to come</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>krimpen</td>
<td>to shrink</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(mis)succes</td>
<td>to succeed (fail)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ontsnappen</td>
<td>to escape</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ontstaan</td>
<td>to originate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ophouden</td>
<td>to stop</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>opstaan</td>
<td>to get up, stand up</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>overlijden</td>
<td>to pass away</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rijken</td>
<td>to rise</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>slagen</td>
<td>to pass (exams), succeed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spruiten</td>
<td>to sprout</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| stappen (in-, uit-, over-) | to step (get in, out etc.) |
| sterven | to die |
| stijgen | to rise |
| stoppen | to stop |
| treden | to tread |
| uitslappen | to sleep in |
| vallen | to fall |
| verkleken | to turn pale |
| verderren | to wither |
| verdwijken | to disappear |
| verkleuren | to change colour |
| verouderen | to get old |
| verscheien | to fade, run (colours) |
| verschijnen | to appear |
| verslikken | to silt up |
| vertrekken | to leave, depart |
| verwelken | to wither |
| (uit)wijken | to give way to |
| worden | to become |
| zakken | to fail (exams) |
| zijn | to be |
| zinken | to sink |
| zwellen | to swell |

---

11.8.2 There is also a group of verbs that can take either *hebben* or *zijn* as the auxiliary in the perfect tenses. There are four categories of such verbs.

1 The following verbs are conjugated with *zijn* if a motion to or from a particular place is mentioned (in which case they do not differ from the verbs in group I); if, however, there is no motion but merely an action, they are conjugated with *hebben*.

| fietsen | — to cycle |
| glijden | — to slide |
| klimmen | — to climb |
| kruiplen | — to crawl |
| lopen | — to walk |
| rennen | — to run |
| rollen | — to run |
| oversteken | — to cross |

| reizen | — to travel |
| rijden* | — to drive, ride |
| rollen* | — to row |
| springen | — to jump |
| trappen | — to pedal, tread |
| varen* | — to go (by sea) |
| vliegen* | — to fly |
| zeilen | — to sail |
| zwemmen | — to swim |

---

17 Many derivatives of these and other verbs also take *zijn*, eg, *ondergaan* (to set of the sun), *verslaan* (to pass), *binnenkomen* (to come in), *opwassen* (to strike). However, not all derivatives do: sometimes the prefixes make transitive verbs of these otherwise intransitive verbs and then *hebben* is used, eg, *ondergaan* (to undergo), *nemen* (to check, trace), *voorkomen* (to prevent), *betreden* (to tread on), *bestijgen* (to ascend the throne).

On the other hand there are sometimes derivatives that take *zijn* when the root verb in its literal sense does not.

*opstaan* (to get up) — *ik ben opgestaan, but staan* (to stand) — *ik heb twee uur gestaan* (to stand two hours)
*afbranden* (to burn down) — *het huis is afgebrand* (the house is burnt down)
*afbranden* (to burn down) — *het huis heeft een lopen gebrand* (the house has been burnt)
*dichtrijden* (to freeze up) — *de rivier is dichtgevroren* (the river is frozen)

18 Many Dutch verbs can take the prefix *uit* giving the meaning 'to be finished doing'. These compound verbs all take *zijn* even if the verbs from which they are formed do not: *uitstappen* — to step in, have one's fill of sleep
*uitsluiten* — to finish saying what one has to say
*uitkijken* — to finish looking

*Ik was nog niet uitgepraat van hij begon al te zingen.*
*I had hardly finished talking before he began to sing.*

Ben je al uitgekomen? — Have you seen enough/finished looking?

19 The prefix *ver-* basically means 'change' (see p. 184) and thus many *ver-* verbs are found in this group; not all *ver-* verbs belong here, however, as many are transitive, eg, *verslaan* (to understand), *vertalen* (to translate, i.e., to change from one language to another).
hij heeft de hele dag gelopen
ik ben in drie kwartier naar Rotterdam gereden
ik heb vandaag erg veel gereden
gisteren is er een Engelsman van Calais naar Dover gezwommen
heb je ooit in de Oostzee gezwommen?

2 Some of the verbs mentioned above can also be used transitively, in which case they take hebben, as do all transitive verbs. They are marked *.

rijden: Heb je ooit een Mercedes gereden?
roeien: Ik heb hem naar de overkant van de rivier geroeid.

3 There is in addition a small group of verbs that take zijn when used intransitively, but hebben when used transitively. They have nothing to do with motion like those in (2), however.

bederven (to spoil)
breken (to break)
genezen (to heal, cure)
ontdooien (to defrost)
smelten (to melt)
veranderen (to change)

Het is bedorven.
Jij hebt het bedorven.
De stoel is gebroken.
Jij hebt hem gebroken.
De wond is genezen.
De dokter heeft me genezen.
De kip is ontdooi
Ik heb de kip ontdooi
De boter is gesmolten.
Jij hebt hem in de pan gesmolten.
Het weer is veranderd.
Ik heb het veranderd.

It has spoiled.
You've spoiled it.
The chair has broken.
You broke it.
The wound has healed.
The doctor (has) cured me.
The chicken has defrosted.
I have defrosted the chicken.
The butter has melted.
You melted it in the pot.
The weather has changed.
I altered it.

4 The verbs dealt with here can be conjugated with zijn or hebben but the criteria for their use are separate in each case:

vergeten (to forget): with hebben the meaning is 'did not think of it' or 'left s.t. behind'.

Ik heb vergeten te schrijven.
Ik heb mijn paraplu vergeten.

With zijn the meaning is 'has gone from one's memory'.

Ik ben glad vergeten waar ik het gelaten heb.
Ik ben je naam vergeten.

In practice most Dutch people use zijn in all cases.

verlieren (to lose s.t. learnt): this verb can be conjugated with hebben or zijn with no difference in meaning.

Ik heb ben het Frans geheel verleerd.

verliezen (to lose): should always be conjugated with hebben but is commonly heard with zijn either by analogy with vergeten or with kwijt zijn.

Ik ben mijn sleutels kwijt.
Ik heb mijn sleutels verloren.

volgen (to follow) when this verb means 'to pursue' it is conjugated with zijn.

De buurman is zijn hond gevolgd.

Otherwise hebben is used.

Ik heb colleges bij hem gevolgd.
Zij heeft de politieke ontwikkelingen in Zuid Afrika gevolgd.

The verb opvolgen (to succeed, follow) is found with both.

Juliana heeft/is haar moeder in 1948 opgevolgd.

Note: Because only one auxiliary (i.e. have) is used in the perfect and pluperfect tenses in English one can often have several past participles following, all dependent on the one 'have'. In Dutch this is only possible if both past participles require hebben; the auxiliary must be repeated if one requires hebben and the other zijn.

He has hired a plane and flown to Russia.
Hij heeft een vliegtuig gehuurd en is naar Rusland gevolgd.

Alternative translations of 'to be':

Very often the English verb 'to be', when indicating the position of something, is
rendered in Dutch by the verbs *hangen* (to hang), *liggen* (to lie), *lopen* (to run), *staan* (to stand) and *zitten* (to sit). They are usually found in repletive *er* constructions (see p. 235).

There are many trees here.  
*Er staan hier veel bomen.*

Behind our house is a canal.  
*Achter ons huis loopt een gracht.*

There is a picture on the wall.  
*Er hangt een schilderij aan de muur.*

What is in that glass?  
*Wat zit er in dat glas?*

11.9 Modal auxiliary verbs (*modale hulpwerkwoorden*)

Modal verbs form a special class of their own because they show a variety of irregular forms and, due to their auxiliary nature in expressing mood, also a variety of meanings. There are four true modals (*kunnen, moeten, mogen, willen*) plus the verbs *durven, hoeven, en zullen* which share one or more modal characteristics.

One feature common to both Dutch and English modals is the lack of a *te* before the infinitive for which it is acting as an auxiliary, eg. *he can do it* — *hij kan het doen.*

11.9.1 FORMS

1 *kunnen* (to be able to, can)

**present:**

1. *ik kan* = I am able, can  
   *wij kunnen*

2. *jij kunt, kan*  
   *jullie kunnen, kunt*

3. *hij kan*  
   *zij kunnen*

*Jij* can take either *kunt* or *kan* and both are equally common; when inverted, *jij kunt* becomes *kun jij.*

*Jullie kunnen* is more common than *jullie kunt.*

**imperfect:**

1. *ik kon = I was able, could*  
   *wij konden*

2. *jij kunde, kon*  
   *jullie konden, kunde*

3. *hij kon*  
   *zij konden*

One finds *gemoeg* (see Perfect tenses of modal verbs, p. 148)

2 *moeten* (to have to, must)

For the negative of *moeten* using *hoeven* see p. 151.

**present:**

1. *ik moet* = I have to, must  
   *wij moeten*

2. *jij, u moet*  
   *jullie moeten, moet*

3. *hij moet*  
   *zij moeten*

*Jullie moet* is not common.

**imperfect:**

1. *ik moest = I had to*  
   *wij moesten*

2. *jij, u moest*  
   *jullie moesten, moest*

3. *hij moest*  
   *zij moesten*

One finds *gemoet* (see Perfect tenses of modal verbs, p. 148)

3 *mogen* (to be allowed to, may)

**present:**

1. *ik mag = I am allowed, may*  
   *wij mogen*

2. *jij, u mag*  
   *jullie mogen, mag*

3. *hij mag*  
   *zij mogen*

*Jullie mag* is not common. The *gij* form is *moogt.*

**imperfect:**

1. *ik mocht = I was allowed to*  
   *wij mochten*

2. *jij, u mocht*  
   *jullie mochten, mocht*

3. *hij mocht*  
   *zij mochten*

One finds *gemogen, gemocht* and *gemoogd,* but in practice most people say *gemogen.*

(see Perfect tenses of modal verbs, p. 148)

4 *wollen* (to want to)

**present:**

1. *ik wil*  
   *wij willen*

2. *jij wilt, wil*  
   *jullie willen, wilt*

3. *hij wil*  
   *zij willen*

(see Perfect tenses of modal verbs, p. 149)
The past participle of modal verbs is not often used. Because of the auxiliary function of modals a perfect tense (including pluperfects, future perfects and conditional perfects) is usually followed by another infinitive and in this case the so-called ‘double infinitive rule’ applies, i.e. if one has an English sentence where the past participle of a modal verb is followed by an infinitive, Dutch does not use the past participle but the infinitive of the modal concerned. (see also Contracted modals in conditional tenses, p. 149)

past participle:

gewild (see ‘Perfect tenses of modal verbs’ below)

11.9.2 PERFECT TENSES OF MODAL VERBS

The past participle of modal verbs is not often used. Because of the auxiliary function of modals a perfect tense (including pluperfects, future perfects and conditional perfects) is usually followed by another infinitive and in this case the so-called ‘double infinitive rule’ applies, i.e. if one has an English sentence where the past participle of a modal verb is followed by an infinitive, Dutch does not use the past participle but the infinitive of the modal concerned. (see also p. 156)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Dutch</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I have not been able to visit him.</td>
<td>Ik heb hem niet kunnen bezoeken.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>They had been allowed to go.</td>
<td>Ze hadden gemoeten.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>She will have had to spend it.</td>
<td>Zij zal het hebben gemoeten.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Only when the infinitive for which the modal is acting as auxiliary is not mentioned (but simply implied), is the past participle used.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Dutch</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ik heb het niet gekund.</td>
<td>I have not been able (to see him).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zij hadden het gemogen.</td>
<td>They had been allowed (to go).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zij zal het hebben gemoeten.</td>
<td>She will have had to (spend it).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note the use of het in such cases.

The following is commonly done by Dutch people with the perfect tense of modals: modals all take hebben as their auxiliary verb in the perfect tense but the speaker is often misled by the infinitive that follows the perfect of the modal,

hij is niet kunnen komen.

Here he anticipates the verb of motion which follows the modal and which requires zijn in its perfect tense, but in actual fact it is the perfect of kunnen which is required here and kunnen requires hebben, eg. hij heeft niet kunnen komen. Similarly hij is wegemoeten, which is an abbreviated form of hij heeft moeten weggaan where gaan is not mentioned but simply implied. (see also p. 150)

11.9.3 CONTRACTED MODALS IN CONDITIONAL TENSES

1 Conditional tense:
The modal auxiliary verbs have in common with the auxiliaries hebben and zijn the fact that they know contracted forms in the conditional. In the case of the conditional the concept is not unknown in English either: for example ‘I could do it’ can mean either ‘I was able to do it’ (an imperfect) or ‘I would be able to do it’ (a conditional).

Kunnen

Similarly the Dutch sentence ik kon het doen is ambiguous without a context and in the latter meaning it replaces ik zou het kunnen doen, where zou is the contracted form of zou kunnen. Either form is permissible but the latter avoids any ambiguity.

Moeten

In the same way, moest, moesten can mean ‘should, ought to’ as well as ‘had to’, eg. je moest meer eten — you should eat more. Jij zou meer moeten eten is equally correct and preferable if ambiguity is likely.

Wollen

It has a contracted form too which means ‘would like to, want to’ and which is also identical to the past tense.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ik zou graag twee kilo appels (hebben)</td>
<td>I would like to have two kilos of apples (had)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ik zou graag twee kilo appels willen (hebben)</td>
<td>I would like two kilos of apples (had)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The adverb graag is commonly used in such ‘would like’ constructions.

Note the following use of wou: ik wou dat ik rijk was — I wish I were rich.

Wilde(n) can never be used in this conditional sense.

Mogen

Knows one contraction in the conditional which is rather formal style and which is translated by ‘should’ in English.

Mocht het regenen, dan komen we niet. Should it rain, we won’t be coming.

2 Conditional perfect of kunnen and moeten: (see also p. 164)
SEMANTIC DIFFICULTIES WITH MODALS

1 Kunnen

a As in English, kunnen (can) and mogen (may) are often confused, eg. ‘Can I borrow your bicycle?’ should actually read ‘May I borrow your bicycle?’ but in practice the semantic distinction between the two is ignored; in Dutch too Kan ik je fiets even lenen? will often be heard for Mag ik je fiets even lenen?

In addition English ‘may’ is often rendered by kunnen in Dutch:

That may be true.  
De koning kan elk ogenblik komen.

The king may come at any moment.

b Kunnen is commonly used in polite requests:

Kunt u het raam even dichtdoen?  
Zou u het raam even dicht kunnen doen?

Kunt u het raam even dichtdoen? (to close the window?)

Kunnen + beter renders English ‘had better’:

You had better not buy a car.  
Je kan beter geen auto kopen.

You had better not buy a car.

c There is a conditional of kunnen is often used to render ‘might’ (see p. 153).

Je moet je vader helpen.

You must (i.e. I advise you to) help your father.

You must (are obliged to) help your father.

Je hoeft je vader niet helpen.

You shouldn’t have to help your father.

You shouldn’t have to help your father.

d A conditional of kunnen is often used to render ‘might’ (see p. 153).

Je moet je vader helpen.

You must (i.e. I advise you to) help your father.

You must (are obliged to) help your father.

Je hoeft je vader niet helpen.

You shouldn’t have to help your father.

You shouldn’t have to help your father.

11.9.5 USE OF INDEPENDENT MODALS

There is one use of modals which differs considerably from English: kunnen, moeten, mogen and willen often stand alone and the verb that follows in English is simply implied in Dutch; this is particularly the case when the implied verbs are doen, gaan, komen, hebben and worden.

Ik kan het niet niet.  
I can’t do it.

Dat moet.  
That must be done.

Je mag naar binnen.  
You may go inside.

Hij zou het niet willen.  
He wouldn’t want to do (or to have) it.

Kan dat?  
Is that possible?

Mag dat?  
Is that allowed?

Dat moet!  
That must be done.

11.9.5 USE OF INDEPENDENT MODALS

There is one use of modals which differs considerably from English: kunnen, moeten, mogen and willen often stand alone and the verb that follows in English is simply implied in Dutch; this is particularly the case when the implied verbs are doen, gaan, komen, hebben and worden.

Ik kan het niet niet.  
I can’t do it.

Dat moet.  
That must be done.

Je mag naar binnen.  
You may go inside.

Hij zou het niet willen.  
He wouldn’t want to do (or to have) it.

Kan dat?  
Is that possible?

Mag dat?  
Is that allowed?

Dat moet!  
That must be done.
the option, i.e. te is always used in the present and imperfect tenses but may be omitted in compound tenses where double infinitive constructions occur,

Dat zal je nooit hoeven (te) doen.
Dat heeft hij nooit hoeven (te) doen.

Note the following use with the negative conjunction zonder: Zonder iets voor me te hoeven doen, heeft hij zijn diensten aangeboden. — Without having to do anything for me, he offered his services.

b 'Should, ought to' are expressed by moeten in Dutch.

Note: not, however, 'should' which means 'would', i.e. I should do it, if I were you — ik zou het doen als ik jou was.

Although the contracted conditional form moest(en) (see 11.9.3) is often used in this sense, the present tense is also very common and is certainly simpler.

You should write more often.
That should be forbidden.

Je moet (moest) vaker schrijven.
Dat moet (moest) verboden worden.

c In formal style the verbs dienen and (be)horen often replace moeten in the sense of 'to be obliged to'. They are always followed by te,

Alle passagiers dienen zich vóór acht uur bij loket vier te melden.
Bestellingen (be)horen vóór 31 januari te worden geplaatst.

3 Mogen

a In addition to the basic meaning of 'to be allowed to', mogen also renders the verb 'to like' (of people), e.g. Ik mag hem graag — I like him a lot, as distinct from ik hou van hem — I love him; otherwise one must say ik vind hem aardig to express 'to like'.

b There is a mogen commonly used with the adverb wel eens which means 'could, would be better if',

Je mag je kamer wel eens opruimen.
You could tidy up your room (to begin with).
Hij mag zich wel eens verkleeden.
He could change his clothes (for once).

c There is an obsolete first person present tense form of mogen that is sometimes used in formal letters (see also p. 160):

Naar aanleiding van uw schrijven van 21 december jl. moge ik u mededelen dat...
With reference to your letter of the 21st December last I would like to inform you that...

d English 'might', a form derived from 'may', is usually expressed in Dutch simply by the addition of misschien (perhaps) to the sentence, but the conditional of kunnen is also possible.

He might come tomorrow.
Hij komt misschien morgen. / Hij zou morgen kunnen komen.
That might be difficult.
Dat zal misschien moeilijk zijn. / Dat zou moeilijk kunnen zijn.

'Might' in the following example is semantically different, however, and misschien cannot be used: He might have asked me if I wanted it — i.e. he could have asked, thus hij had mij kunnen vragen of ik het hebben wilde.

4 Willen

a In addition to the meaning 'want', the Dutch verb willen also often renders English 'will'; in such cases no futurity is expressed but a polite imperative (also English 'would you mind...').

Will you please shut the window.
Wilt u het raam even dichtdoen.

b English 'would like' is expressed by the conditional of willen (see p. 149),

I would like a cup of tea.
Ik zou graag een kopje thee willen hebben. / Ik zou graag een kopje thee.
The infinitive (de onbepaalde wijs)

11.10.1 CHARACTERISTICS OF THE INFINITIVE

The infinitive or basic undecorated form of the verb always ends in -en in Dutch, *lopen* (to run), *lachen* (to laugh), etc.

There are six monosyllabic verbs ending in -n in the infinitive, *doen, gaan, slaan, staan, zien, zijn*.

English always puts 'to' before the infinitive in isolation. One should learn each new verb as follows: *lopen* = to run. In context, however, there are occasions when this 'to' may or may not be used. Similarly in Dutch, although the infinitive in isolation is never preceded by *te*, in context there are rules for when it is and is not used.

11.10.2 RULES FOR THE USE OF *TE*

As a general rule one can say that an infinitive at the end of a clause is always preceded by *te* except in the following cases:

1. When the infinitive is used as a general impersonal imperative (see p. 159),
   *niet roken, geen lawaai maken, niet zo langzaam lopen.*

2. It is never used after modal verbs, i.e. when a modal is the finite verb in the clause. Dutch shares this feature with English.
   *Hij kan het niet doen.*
   He can't do it./He isn't able to do it.
   *Wij hebben tien boeken moeten lezen.*
   We had to read ten books.

Note the English modal *to want to*, where a 'to' is used (compare 'to be able to' and 'to have to' above), unlike Dutch.

   He wants to go. — *Hij wil gaan.*

3. The auxiliary *hebben* which is used to form the negative of *moeten* is commonly followed by *te*, unlike the modals. (see p. 151)

4. The verbs *durven* (to dare), *staan* (to stand), *liggen* (to lie) and *zitten* (to sit) behave in a similar way to *hebben*:
   *Durf je dat te doen?*
   Do you dare (to) say that?
   *Dat heb ik nooit durven (te) zeggen.*
   I never dared (to) say that.

The verbs *proberen* and *trachten* (to try) know a double infinitive construction like that of the above verbs but it is always followed by *te*:

   *Hij probeerde mij te helpen.*
   He tried to help me.
   *Hij heeft mij proberen te helpen./Hij heeft geprobeerd mij te helpen.*
   He (has) tried to help me.

The verb *beginnen*, when used in the perfect tense and followed by another infinitive, usually follows the regular pattern of past participle + *te* + infinitive but it can also follow the same pattern as *proberen*, using the infinitive instead of the past participle:

   *Toen is het kind begonnen te schreeuwen./Toen is het kind beginnen te schreeuwen.*
   Then the child started to scream.
   *Hij is beginnen een brief te schrijven./Hij is een brief beginnen te schrijven.*
   He began to write a letter.

Similarly the verb *weten* which literally means 'to know' but renders English 'to manage to' in such constructions:

   *Hij wist te ontsnappen.*
   He managed to escape.
   *Hij heeft het weten te vinden.*
   He (has) managed to find it.

Note: Often *zijn* is used colloquially with this *weten* in the perfect tense when the following infinitive is a verb of motion (the same often occurs with modals in the perfect tense, see p. 148)

   *Hij is weten te ontsnappen.*

5 a When the following verbs are used as finite verbs and are followed by an infinitive, the infinitive is not preceded by *te*:

   *komen, gaan, horen, vinden, voelen, zien, leren, helpen, blijven, zijn, hebben*
Zij hoorde mij komen.
She heard me coming.
Ik vond hem bij het raam staan.
I found him standing by the window.

b All these verbs (except hebben, see p. 170) employ a double infinitive construction in the perfect tense, i.e. they use an infinitive, not a past participle when followed by another infinitive (see also Perfect tenses of modal verbs, p. 148). Such constructions are very common because of the tendency in Dutch to use the perfect tense instead of the imperfect — see the translations of the following examples:

Ik heb hem horen komen.
I heard him coming.
Hij is gaan kijken.
He has gone (went) to look.

Note: Use of zijn — perfect tense of gaan, a verb of motion.

Hij heeft zijn hart voelen kloppen.
He felt his heart beating.
Ik heb mijn zoontje leren zwemmen.
I taught my son to swim.

De aardappels hebben koud staan worden.
The potatoes have been getting cold.

Hij heeft zijn handen leren gebruiken.
He has learnt to use his hands.
Hij is blijven doorpraten.
He went on talking.

Note: zijn has a special alternative infinitive used only in such double infinitive constructions:
Zijn wezen kijken.
They have been to have a look.
See p. 140.

c Laten in such constructions is often rendered by a passive in English:
Hij heeft een huis laten bouwen.
He has had built a house.
Ik heb mijn haar laten knippen.
I (have) had my hair cut.

Doen often replaces laten in more formal style:
De regering heeft het parlementsgebouw doen ontruimen.
The government (has) had parliament house evacuated.

d There are some pairs of infinitives incorporating the above verbs which render a new concept in English:
blijven zitten — to fail, stay down (at school)
gaan zitten — to sit down
blijven staan — to stop still
doen denken — to remind (someone of something)

e Note the following idiomatic use of hebben which requires no te before the infinitive that follows it:

Ik heb een tante in Friesland zitten.
I have an aunt living in Friesland.
Zij heeft een prachtige lamp in de hoek staan.
She has a beautiful lamp standing in the corner.

11.10.3 USE OF OM... TE BEFORE INFINITIVES

This is a complicated issue in Dutch and seems to be in the process of changing. There are a few instances where only te can be used (see 11.10.2) and a few cases where only om... te can be used:

1 When English 'to' means 'in order to' (compare the poetic form 'for to cross the road'),

Ik ga naar de stad om een hoed te kopen.
I am going to town to buy a hat.
Het is niet nodig (om) de weg over te steken om bij de winkels te komen.
It is not necessary to cross the road to reach the shops.

2 When a sentence begins with the infinitive clause:

Om te besluiten zou ik...
To finish, I would...

3 When the infinitive construction follows a noun that it is describing; in such cases om is always followed by a preposition:

Een pad om op te fietsen.
A path to ride on.
Een surf-boot is een boot om mee door de branding te gaan.
A surf-boat is a boat to go through the surf with.
Nieuwe huizen zijn niet prettig om in te wonen.
New houses are not nice to live in.
Ik heb al mijn kinderen om voor te zorgen.
I have all my children to look after.
In all other cases the use of te or om… te is optional but nowadays there is a tendency to include om wherever possible.

Ze weigerde (om) mee te gaan. She refused to go along.
Het is daar niet (om) uit te houden. It is impossible to tolerate there.
Het is stom (om) een oude auto te kopen. It is stupid to buy an old car.
Ik ben vergeten (om) te vragen. I forgot to ask.
Zij was van plan (om) een uitstapje naar Marken te maken. She intended making a trip to Marken.
Dat is niet (om) te doen. That can’t be done.

11.10.4 THE INFINITIVE AS A NOUN

The infinitive is also used as a neutral noun:
blaffen – to bark, thus het blaffen – the barking
behangen – to wallpaper, thus het behangen – the wallpapering

Ik ben tegen het roken. I am against smoking.
Het uit je hoofd leren van werkwoorden valt tegen. Learning verbs by heart isn’t easy.
Vermijd het te veel drinken van wodka als je in Rusland bent. Avoid drinking too much vodka when you’re in Russia.

11.11 The imperative mood (de gebiedende wijs)

11.11.1 As the imperative is an order form addressed to a second person there is a jij, jullie and u form.

werk
werken jullie work!
werkt u

The form derived from the simple stem can actually be used for all persons whether singular or plural, familiar or polite.

20 te used with a separable verb goes between the prefix and the verb and the three words are written separately.

The imperative mood (de gebiedende wijs)

11.11.1 As the imperative is an order form addressed to a second person there is a jij, jullie and u form.

werk
werken jullie work!
werkt u

The form derived from the simple stem can actually be used for all persons whether singular or plural, familiar or polite.

20 te used with a separable verb goes between the prefix and the verb and the three words are written separately.
11.12 The subjunctive mood (de aanvoegende wijz)

The subjunctive, which was formerly quite common in Dutch and may still be met in older literature, is not actively used any more. It has suffered the same fate in Dutch as in English; it is only preserved in certain standard expressions. As in English, it is used to express actions that are wished for, feared, doubted or are conditional on other actions.

The present subjunctive differs from the present indicative in that the first and third persons singular end in -e, eg. ik wil, hij wilde. (Jij, being a familiar form, is never found with a subjunctive form.) Note that sometimes in formal letter style an archaic first person present tense from ending in -e is used; this should not be confused with subjunctive (see also p. 152):

Naar aanleiding van uw brief van 21 december moge ik u mededelen...
Verblijf met de meeste hoogachtung

The imperfect subjunctive of weak verbs is the same as the indicative, but that of strong verbs ends in -e in the first and third persons singular and is otherwise the same as the imperfect indicative, eg. ik hadde, hij kwame.

The monosyllabic verbs doen, gaan, slaan, staan and zien add no -e but employ the stem only. Zijn has the irregular forms zij (first and third persons present subjunctive) and waren (first and third persons imperfect subjunctive).

Examples of some commonly used subjunctives:

leve de koningin

tijd het kost wat het wil

tijd het ga u goed

God zij dank

wat hij ook mag doen

als het ware

long live the Queen

cost what it may

may all go well for you

thanks be to God

whatever he may do

as it were

Note the final example has a parallel in English; the English imperfect subjunctive preserved in 'if I/he were rich...' no longer exists in Dutch, however, i.e. als ik/jij rijk was...

There is one present subjunctive that is still productive: in formal writing a third person singular subjunctive with the subject pronoun men renders an imperative, eg. men lete hierop, men herleze mijn openingswoord ter gelegenheid van het derde colloquium.

This form is commonly used in recipes.

11.13 The passive (de lijdende vorm)

11.13.1 THE TENSES OF THE PASSIVE

Present : Het raam wordt (door hem) gewassen.
The window is (being) washed (by him).

Imperfect : Het raam werd (door hem) gewassen.
The window was (being) washed (by him).

Perfect  : Het raam is (door hem) gewassen [geworden].
The window has been washed (by him).

Pluperfect : Het raam was (door hem) gewassen [geworden].
The window had been washed (by him).

Future   : Het raam zal (door hem) gewassen worden.
The window will be washed (by him).

Conditional : Het raam zou (door hem) gewassen worden.
The window would be washed (by him).

The window will have been washed (by him).

The window would have been washed (by him).

11.13.2 WHAT IS THE PASSIVE?

The passive is a voice, not a tense, because all tenses of the active extend to the passive too. A passive construction is one where the logical object of the action becomes the subject of the finite verb, i.e.

active : he washes the window — hij wast het raam.
passive: the window is washed (by him) — het raam wordt (door hem) gewassen.

In the passive the agent of the action may be left unmentioned if so desired, but it is always implied.

21 Because of the Dutch tendency to use the perfect tense where English uses the imperfect, this can also be translated with 'was washed'.

As zijn is also used to form the active perfect tense of some intransitive verbs, there is no formal difference between the active perfects of those verbs and the passive perfects of all other verbs.

Hij is in Amsterdam aangekomen,
Hij is in Amsterdam gestan.
11.13.3 HOW TO CONSTRUCT THE PASSIVE

The passive is constructed in English by a form of the verb 'to be' plus a past participle plus an optional agent introduced by the preposition 'by'.

i.e. subject + to be + past participle (+ by + noun/pronoun)
e.g. the window is being washed by him

The Dutch passive differs in that the verb worden is used, not zijn, to translate the verb 'to be' and 'by' is translated by door.

i.e. subject + worden (+ door + noun/pronoun) + past participle
e.g. het raam wordt door hem gewassen

11.13.4 DIFFICULTIES WITH THE PASSIVE

1 Perfect and pluperfect passive

A complication arises where the auxiliary worden is required in the perfect tense.

i.e. the window has been washed.

Here one would expect: het raam is gewassen worden

has washed been

This double participle is not liked, however, and the Dutchman simply drops the geworden, claiming that if 'a window has been washed' then it 'is washed', i.e. is gewassen.

Similarly in the pluperfect 'the window had been washed' should be: het raam was gewassen worden, but the geworden is dropped because if 'the window had been washed' then it 'was washed', i.e. was gewassen.

These two forms is/was gewassen lead the English speaker, however, to think that a sentence like 'the window is/was washed by him' is het raam is/was door hem gewassen. Be careful here. In this case the present or past of worden is required.

Note: The perfect tense is more common in Dutch than in English because of the tendency to render English imperfects with perfects in Dutch.

The car was washed by him yesterday.
De auto werd gisteren door hem gewassen. /De auto is gisteren door hem gewassen.

2 Action versus state with the past participle

A further but related difficulty arises with a sentence like 'the door is closed'. If one is describing an action, i.e. if the sentence is 'the door is (being) closed (by him)', then the present tense of worden must be used: de deur wordt (door hem) gesloten.

Similarly, in the past 'the door was shut'; if it means 'the door was (being) shut (by him)', it will be in Dutch de deur werd (door hem) gesloten.

But perhaps only a state, not an action, is implied, i.e. the door is/was closed. Here the past participle can be regarded simply as an adjective as in 'the door is/was red' and no agent is implied. If this is the case then the sentence is translated: de deur is/was gesloten.

We thus see that 'the door has (had) been closed' and 'the door is (was) closed' are both de deur is/was gesloten and the context tells us what is intended.

3 Passives with indirect objects

A special difficulty arises in passive sentences such as the following: I was given a book (by them). If one looks firstly at the active of this sentence 'They gave a book to me' one sees that the English 'I' is an indirect object in meaning: I was not given, a book was given to me. Such indirect objects in passive sentences can be rendered in three ways in Dutch:

(Aan) mij werd een boek gegeven. (less common)  
Een boek werd aan mij gegeven. (less common)  
Er werd een boek aan mij gegeven. / Er werd mij een boek gegeven.

The last alternative which utilizes a repleitive er is very common in the passive in Dutch, especially when the agent is not determined.

Er werden gisteren veel ramen gewassen.  
Many windows were washed yesterday.

Er moet wat gedaan worden.  
Something must be done.

Er werden felicitaties aan hen gestuurd.  
They were sent congratulations.

4 Use of modals with the passive

Modal verbs often act as auxiliaries in the passive too as in English and should simply be translated literally.

It must be done. − Het moet gedaan worden,  
It couldn't be cleaned. − Het kon niet schoongemaakt worden.
The following modal constructions differ considerably from English, however:

That could have been done. — Dat had gedaan kunnen worden.
That should have been done. — Dat had gedaan moeten worden.

5 Word-order with modals

In main clauses the order of the constituent parts of the passive with a modal verb can be either:

Dat kan gedaan worden./Dat kan worden gedaan.
Dat zou gedaan moeten worden./Dat zou moeten worden gedaan.

In sub-ordinate clauses the following alternatives exist (the finite verb is never placed after the verbal cluster).

Ik weet dat het gedaan kan worden./Ik weet dat het kan worden gedaan.
Hij zei dat het gedaan zou moeten worden./Hij zei dat het zou moeten worden gedaan.

6 Contracted conditionals in the passive

Contracted forms of zijn are common in the passive. (see p. 121)

The city would have been destroyed if...
De stad was vernietigd als...

The book would have been read sooner if...
Het boek was eerder gelezen als...

7 Passives rendered by adjectival adjuncts (see p. 67)

It is common in journalse style and other written style to replace relative clauses containing a passive with adjectival adjuncts placed before the relevant noun.

Het huis dat gisteren door hem werd geverfd.
Het gisteren door hem geverfde huis.

Het bedrag dat nog door haar betaald moet worden.
Het nog door haar te betalen bedrag.

Such constructions must be translated into English with relative clauses.

8 There are some impersonal English passives which are rendered in Dutch by an infinitive construction, thus avoiding the passive.

There was nobody to be seen. — Er was niemand te zien.
That was to be expected. — Dat was te verwachten.
That is to be hoped. — Dat is te hopen.
Where can that book be got? — Waar is dat boek te krijgen?

9 Use of men/je/ze instead of the passive

It should be noted that the passive in all its forms is more common in English than in Dutch. Very often the Dutchman uses an active form of the verb with men (one) or je (you) as its subject.

Dutch is spoken here.
Cows can be milked by hand.

Men spreekt hier Nederlands.
Men/je kan koeien met de hand melken.

Men is as formal in Dutch as 'one' is in English. In everyday speech je (never jij) is used, just as in English.

English can also use a non-personal 'they' instead of the passive; Dutch knows this too and uses ze (never zij).

English: They say it's going to rain. (= it is said that)
Dutch: Ze zeggen dat het gaat regenen.

11.14 Progressive or continuous tenses

When first learning Dutch verbs one is told that a form such as 'I am working' is ik werk, 'I was working' is ik werkte and 'I have been working' is ik heb gewerkt. This is indeed usually the case but there are instances where the continuous aspect needs to be expressed and there are three ways of doing so in Dutch:

11.14.1 zijn aan 't + infinitive:

Ik ben druk aan 't koken.
I am busy cooking.

Ik was de hele middag aan 't timmeren.
I was hammering away all afternoon.

Ik ben urenlang aan 't koken geweest.
I have been cooking for hours (and have finished, see p. 121).

This is the most common way.

11.14.2 zitten, staan, liggen or lopen + te + infinitive:

Zij zit een boek te lezen.
She is reading a book.

Hij stond buiten met de buurman te praten.
He was (standing) talking to the neighbour outside.

Jantje ligt te slapen.
Jantje is sleeping.

Note: Zij zit een hele tijd dat boek te lezen.
She has been reading that book for ages. (see p. 155)
Hij heeft urenlang liggen slapen.
He was asleep for hours.
Ik heb ermaar lopen zoeken.
I have been looking for it.

This is also a very common construction.

11.14.3 zijn bezig te + infinitive:
Ik ben bezig een boek te schrijven.
I am (busy) writing a book.
Zij waren bezig het hele appartement te verven.
They were painting the whole flat.

This is not as common as 11.14.1 and 11.14.2.

11.15 Emphatic present and imperfect tenses formed with 'to do'
One usually learns that a form such as ik werk renders three English forms, i.e. I work, I am working, I do work and the imperfect ik werkte renders I worked, I was working, I did work. This is so, but just as the am/was working forms can be expressed in a different way in Dutch (see p. 165), so can the emphatic forms using 'to do' have an equivalent in Dutch. In this case, however, the adverb wel can follow the verb to give it the required emphasis.

Let er wel goed op.
Do take note of it.
Ik heb het wel gedaan.
I did do it.
(the opposite of:
Ik heb het niet gedaan)

11.16 The present participle (het tegenwoordig deelwoord)
The present participle in Dutch is formed by adding -d(e) to the infinitive, eg. zijnde — being, lopend(e) — walking, kijkend(e) — looking. Sentence or word rhythm determines whether the -e is added; for example, all monosyllabic verbs add -de.
The present participle is not commonly used in Dutch as most English -ing constructions are expressed in other ways (see p. 168). It is used in the following instances:

11.16.1 Many adjectives are formed from the infinitive + -d:
- een lachende vrouw
  a laughing woman
- een roerend verhaal
  a moving story
- dit is uitstekend
  this is excellent
- volgende week
  next week
- volgend jaar
  next year
- de wassende maan
  the waxing moon

11.16.2 It is commonly used as an adverb of manner, in which case it has a direct parallel in English:

Het kind kwam huilend binnen.
The child came in crying.
Ik ging er lopend naartoe.
I did it by walking/on foot.

11.16.3 It renders some English -ing forms in certain standard expressions:

als vrouw zijnde,...
being a woman,...
jou kennende,...
knowing you,...
zodoende,...
by so doing,...

In addition, the form al -de meaning 'while -ing' is quite common in good style:
al reizende leert men veel
one learns a lot while travelling
al lezende ontdekte hij dat...
while reading he discovered that...

11.16.4 In the written language it is often used in much the same way as -ing in English (see p. 169 for alternative constructions commonly used in the spoken language).

Aankomend op de Grote Markt in Brussel verbaasde hij zich dat...
Arriving at the Grand' Place in Brussels he was amazed that...
Uitgaande van wat hier geschreven staat...
Going on what is written here...
Daar stond een ruine, bestaande uit een toren en een gedeelte van de stadsmuur.
There was a ruin there consisting of a tower and a section of the city wall.
Dit zeggend verliet hij de kamer.
Saying this he left the room.

11.16.5 It can also be used to form nouns, in which case it always ends in -de and takes a plural in -n.

de overlevende(n)
  the survivor(s)
de inzittende(n)
  the passenger(s) (in a car)

11.16.6 A few present participles have assumed the function of prepositions:
gedurende
  during
betreffende
  concerning, with regard to
aangaande

22 Although a common expression, some people would disapprove of the use of als in this case.
11.17  How to render English ‘-ing’ forms in Dutch

The use of -ing constructions in the formation of the progressive continuous form of the present and imperfect tenses (i.e. I am/was buying a book) is described on p. 113 and p. 115 and is thus not discussed here.

Although there is the possibility of expressing the English present participle literally in Dutch on occasions, this is rarely done in colloquial speech and such forms are reserved for literary or more formal style (see p. 167).

The present participle is usually avoided in Dutch. It is generally necessary to paraphrase an English sentence containing an -ing construction in order to translate it into natural Dutch. The following are the most common ways of doing so. (When seeking the appropriate translation, look at the phrases in bold type for the construction which most resembles the one you have to put into Dutch).

11.17.1  With the infinitive plus te:

It is lovely being here.
Het is heerlijk hier te zijn.
I succeeded in seeing the queen.
Het lukte mij de koningin te zien.
I like staying at home.
Ik hou ervan thuis te blijven. (also: Ik blijf graag thuis. see 11.17.11)
He left without saying a word.
Hij vertrok zonder een woord te zeggen. (see 11.17.3)
He remained seated instead of standing up.
Hij bleef zitten in plaats van op te staan. (see 11.17.3, also p. 202)

11.17.2  English -ing clauses introduced by ‘by’ or ‘from’ are rendered in Dutch by infinitive clauses introduced by door or van (see p. 201):

I’m trying to lose weight by eating nothing.
Ik probeer af te vallen door niets te eten.
By doing that you’ll achieve nothing.
Door dat te doen zul je niets bereiken.
You get tired from reading so much.
Je wordt erg moe van zo veel te lezen.

11.17.3  Some -ing clauses are avoided by using dat constructions in Dutch:

They had already arrived there without our knowing it.
Ze waren er al aangekomen zonder dat wij het wilden.
(Compare: We waren er al aangekomen zonder het te weten

where the subject of both parts is the same, see 11.17.1)
Instead of him doing it I had to do it. (compare 11.17.1)
In plaats van dat hij het deed, moest ik het doen.

11.17.4  Some -ing clauses can be paraphrased by ‘since/because’ clauses which are rendered in Dutch by the conjunctions daar/omdat, the former being rather formal:

Being sick he could not come.
Daar hij ziek was, kon hij niet komen. (i.e. Since he was sick…)
Being students we didn’t need to pay anything.
Omdat wij studenten waren, hoefden we niets te betalen.

11.17.5  When there is a temporal sense expressed in the English -ing construction, subordinating conjunctions of time are used in Dutch.

Finding the house uninhabited, he didn’t want to...
Toen hij merkte dat het huis onbewoond was, wilde hij niet...
Having recovered he went home.
Toen hij hersteld was, ging hij naar huis.
Before going to bed we drank a cup of tea.
Voordat we naar bed gingen, dronken we een kopje thee.
(After) having written a letter to his mother he went and sat in front of the T.V.
Na een brief aan zijn moeder te hebben geschreven, ging hij voor de televisie zitten.
This could also be translated as follows:
Nadat hij een brief aan zijn moeder geschreven had, ging hij...
When writing a letter you must be neat.
Wanneer je een brief schrijft, moet je netjes zijn.

11.17.6  Some -ing clauses can be paraphrased with ‘while’ and these are rendered in Dutch by a subordinate clause introduced by terwijl.

Saying that he smiled.
Terwijl hij dat zei, glimlachte hij.

11.17.7  If the English construction is ‘to stand, sit or lie doing something’, Dutch translates the present participle with an infinitive.

He stood waving at the window.
Hij stond aan het raam te wuiven.
They were sitting (sat) looking at the film.
Zij zaten naar de film te kijken.
11.17.11 ‘To like/prefer doing something’ is rendered by the very commonly used construction "iets graag/liever doen."

- I like watching him.
  *Ik kijk graag naar hem.*
- They prefer sitting inside.
  *Zij zitten liever binnen.*
- He likes getting up early.
  *Hij houdt ervan vroeg op te staan.*

11.17.12 Constructions such as ‘to think of doing something’ are rendered by a clause containing a prepositional object followed by an infinitive clause (see *er*, p. 236).

- He is thinking of buying a boat.
  *Hij denkt ervan een boot te kopen.*
- I suspected my family of having sold the house.
  *Ik verdacht er mijn familie van het huis te hebben verkocht.*
- Does anyone feel like going to the cinema?
  *Heeft er iemand zin in naar de bioscoop te gaan?*

11.17.13 Occasionally an "-ing" construction introduces a new clause and can be avoided in Dutch by inserting a conjunction and making a normal co-ordinate clause of it.

- As he was very ill he stayed in bed all day, not getting up till the evening.
  *Daar hij erg ziek was, bleef hij de hele dag in bed liggen en stond pas 's avonds op.*

11.18 Reflexive verbs (wederkerende werkwoorden)

Reflexive verbs are verbs which have as their object a reflexive pronoun, i.e. the action reflects back on the subject of the verb. The concept is known to English but is not nearly as common. For example, the verb ‘to shave’ can be used in two ways: I shave every day; the barber shaved me. In Dutch the verb *scheren* must have an object;

11.17.8 Some English "-ing" constructions are disguised relative clauses and must be translated as such into Dutch.

- The tree standing in the park is very old.
  *De boom die in het park staat, is erg oud.*
- The man in the corner reading the paper is my uncle.
  *De man in de hoek die de krant zit te lezen, is mijn oom.*

11.17.9 An infinitive noun construction also exists but can usually be avoided by other means:

- You must be careful when getting in.
  *Je moet oppassen bij het instappen.*

This could of course be translated as follows:

- Je moet oppassen wanneer/als je instapt.

11.17.10 The so-called *gerund* in English, i.e. the present participle used as a noun, is rendered in Dutch by the infinitive — such nouns are always neuter (see 11.17.9).

- The cooking of vegetables is a great art.
  *Het koken van groenten is een grote kunst.*
- Writing novels doesn’t interest me.
  *Het schrijven van romans interesseert me niet.*
- Going out is very expensive.
  *Uitgaan is erg duur.*

Note: No *smoking.*

- Niet roken. (an imperative in Dutch)
that is to say, if you are not shaving someone else (e.g. de kapper schoor me) then you must be shaving yourself and must thus say so, i.e. ik schoor me iedere dag. To omit this reflexive pronoun would be incorrect and is an error commonly committed by English speakers.

There are two basic sorts of reflexive verbs:

a those that are always reflexive;
b those that may be used reflexively but which can also be used as transitive verbs with direct objects (such as scheren above).

It is impossible to list all the verbs in both groups but the list on the following page will serve to illustrate the concepts.

The reflexive pronouns are as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st person</th>
<th>2nd person</th>
<th>3rd person</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>me (lit. mij)</td>
<td>je</td>
<td>zich</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- myself</td>
<td>- yourself</td>
<td>- himself</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ons</td>
<td>je</td>
<td>zich</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ourselves</td>
<td>yourselves</td>
<td>themselves</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>zelf</td>
<td>- itself</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je</td>
<td>je</td>
<td>- oneself</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>u</td>
<td>- oneself</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je</td>
<td>je</td>
<td>- oneself</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zelf</td>
<td>zich</td>
<td>- oneself</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Example:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>singular</th>
<th>plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ik heb me gewassen</td>
<td>wij hebben ons gewassen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(I washed (myself) etc.)</td>
<td>(we have washed ourselves)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jij hebt je gewassen</td>
<td>jullie hebben je gewassen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u hebt u gewassen</td>
<td>u heeft u gewassen</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that some such verbs can also be used as transitive verbs (like those in 11.18.2) but then their meaning is quite different from that given here:

herstellen — to repair, herinneren — to remind, verdiepen — to deepen, voorstellen — to introduce.

Verbs in this group are never used with -zelf. (see p. 175)

11.18.2 TRANSITIVE VERBS THAT CAN BE USED REFLEXIVELY

All the verbs in this group also occur as normal transitive verbs, e.g. hij verdedigde zich — he defended himself, but also het leger verdedigde de stad — the army defended the town.
The verbs in this category are actually too numerous to list in their entirety. For instance, one would not normally call the verb verkopen (to sell) a reflexive verb, but there can be occasions when one wants to express ‘to sell oneself’ and this must be rendered by zich verkopen.

The following list, although very limited, will serve to illustrate:

- **zich aankleden**
  - to dress (oneself), get dressed
- **zich amuseren**
  - to amuse, enjoy oneself
- **zich bewegen**
  - to move
- **zich bezighouden met**
  - to busy oneself with
- **zich ergen**
  - to get irritated
- **zich inschrijven**
  - to enrol
- **zich omdraaien**
  - to turn around
- **zich opruimen**
  - to clean up
- **zich opofferen voor**
  - to sacrifice oneself for
- **zich opstapelen**
  - to pile up, accumulate
- **zich opwinden**
  - to get excited
- **zich scheren**
  - to shave
- **zich snijden**
  - to cut oneself
- **zich terugtrekken**
  - to retreat, pull back
- **zich uitkleden**
  - to undress oneself, get undressed
- **zich verbazen**
  - to be amazed
- **zich verbergen**
  - to hide (oneself)
- **zich verschuilen**
  - to hide (oneself)
- **zich verstoppen**
  - to hide (oneself)
- **zich verdedigen**
  - to defend oneself
- **zich verkleden**
  - to change one’s clothes
- **zich veroorloven**
  - to afford
- **zich vervelen**
  - to feel bored
- **zich voelen**
  - to feel
- **zich voorbereiden op**
  - to prepare oneself for
- **zich voorstellen**
  - to introduce oneself

25 Note the following peculiarity of **zich snijden**: if the part of the body one has cut is mentioned, it is preceded by *en* in and the definite article is commonly used (see p. 50).

26 There are three ways of expressing ‘to afford’ (actually always expressed in Dutch as ‘to be able to afford’).

11.18.4 USE OF INDEPENDENT ZELF

English often uses myself, yourself etc. with verbs that would not normally be classified as reflexive verbs. In such cases the reflexive pronoun is used to emphasize who the doer of the action concerned is. In Dutch these pronouns are expressed simply by *zelf*.
11.19 Transitive and intransitive verbs
(overgangelijke en onovergangelijke werkwoorden)

11.19.1 Very often difficulties arise with verbs because the distinction between transitive and intransitive is not fully understood: transitive verbs are those that can take a direct object and intransitive verbs are those that can't. Verbs that are transitive in English may not necessarily be so in Dutch. For example, if one wants to translate 'I answer the question' one will find in the dictionary under 'to answer' the words antwoorden and beantwoorden. A good dictionary will indicate that the former is intransitive and the latter transitive. The above example will thus be translated by either ik beantwoord de vraag or ik antwoord op de vraag (intransitive verbs often take prepositional objects).

It is not possible to give rules for such difficulties but the following common examples will serve to illustrate what one has to be wary of:

to burn = branden (intr.) − het hout brandde
verbranden (trans.) − hij verbrandde het hout
to leave = vertrekken (intr.) − de trein vertrok om tien uur
verlaten (trans.) − de trein verliet Amsterdam om tien uur
to taste = smaken (intr.) − de appel smaakt goed
proeven (trans.) − proef deze appel

11.19.2 Sometimes a verb which is both transitive and intransitive in English, but only intransitive in Dutch, is made transitive by the use of laten as an auxiliary (in more formal style doen). This is done when no separate transitive verb exists in Dutch.

to sink = zinken (intr.) − het stuk metaal zonk
(trans. & intr.) laten zinken (trans.) − ik heb het laten zinken
I sank it

to shrink = krimpen (intr.) − de trui is gekrompen
(trans. & intr.) laten krimpen (trans.) − ik heb hem laten krimpen
I shrank it

to run = lopen (intr.) − het paard liep langs het strand
(trans. & intr.) laten lopen (trans.) − ik heb het langs het strand laten lopen
I ran it along the beach

Such laten constructions are very common in Dutch (see p. 156).

11.19.3 Transitive verbs are usually conjugated with hebben in the perfect tenses
Impersonal verbs are those which only occur in the third person (usually only in the singular, but some can occur in the plural too). In the third person singular the subject is always het. English has impersonal verbs too but Dutch has more.

### 11.20.1 VERBS THAT ARE IMPERSONAL IN ENGLISH AND DUTCH

1. Verbs denoting weather conditions which are used only in the third person singular:
   - **het bliksem**
     - there's lightning
   - **het donder**
     - it's thundering
   - **het dooit**
     - it's thawing
   - **het hagelt**
     - it's hailing
   - **het onweert**
     - there's a fog
   - **het regen**
     - there's a thunderstorm
   - **het schijnt/kijkt**
     - it's raining
   - **het sneeuwt**
     - it's snowing
   - **het stormt**
     - there's a storm
   - **het trek/tocht**
     - there's a draught

2. Several other verbs that can be used in the third person singular:
   - **gebeuren, geschieden** (lit.):
     - it happened at night
   - **het gebeurde 's nachts betreffen**:
     - as far as I'm concerned, ...
   - **overkomen**:
     - it happened to me

### 11.20.2 VERBS THAT ARE IMPERSONAL IN DUTCH BUT NOT IN ENGLISH

These verbs often denote a feeling or reaction.

- **bevallen**
  - *het bevallen* to me
  - I like it
- **spijten**
  - *het spijt* me
  - I'm sorry
- **lukken**
  - *het lukt* me (niet)
  - I succeeded (didn't succeed)
- **zwaar vallen**
  - *het valt* me zwaar
  - I find it difficult
- **mee-, tegenvallen**
  - *het valt* me mee (tegen)
  - I (don't) like it
- **verbazen**
  - *het verbaast* me
  - I'm amazed
- **verheugen**
  - *het verheugt* me
  - I'm pleased
- **verwonderen**
  - *het verwonderen* me
  - I'm surprised

These verbs are often followed by *dat* clauses.

### 11.21 Verbal prefixes (*werkwoordelijke voorvoegsels*)

In Dutch both separable and inseparable verbal prefixes are used to form new words. This is a very economical means of vocabulary building. In many instances there are parallel examples in English, e.g. to go = gaan, to undergo = ondergaan; to look = kijken, to look up = opkijken. (The accents are not normally written but merely serve to indicate the stress.) Often, however, the addition of a prefix in Dutch renders a totally new word, eg. *spreken* = to speak, *tegen spreken* = to contradict; *huren* = to hire/rent, *verhuren* = to rent out; *geven* = to give, *toegeven* = to admit.

Separable verbs are recognised by the fact that the prefix bears the stress; this is not the case with inseparable verbs, eg. *voorstellen* = to introduce, *voorspellen* = to predict.

A verb that normally takes *hebben* in the perfect tense may, by the addition of a prefix, take on a new meaning which requires *zijn* in the same tense; the reverse is also true, e.g. *staan* (to stand) takes *hebben* but *opstaan* (to get/stand up) takes *zijn*; *komen* (to come) takes *zijn* but *voorkomen* (to prevent) takes *hebben*.

27 These verbs can be used with other persons, eg. *ik beviel hem niet, hij valt me tegen etc.*, but are commonly found in the third person and in such contexts are rendered by personal constructions in English as is shown in the above examples.
11.21.1 SEPARABLE VERBS (scheibbare werkwoorden)

There are three sorts of separable prefixes:

1 Prepositional prefixes, many of which can also be inseparable, eg. *aan, bij, door, mee*\(^{28}\) (from *mede* = *met*), *om, onder, op*, *over, tegen*, *toe*\(^{28}\) (from *tot*), *uit*, *voor*

(* those that can only be separable)

2 Nominal prefixes formed from what is actually the object of the verb but which has been used so frequently with certain verbs that the object has come to be regarded as a verbal prefix and behaves as a separable prefix, i.e. is joined to the verb in the infinitive and the past participle. It is not wrong, however, to write these prefixes separately, eg. *koffiedrinken* (to drink coffee), *haarknippen* (to cut hair), *boekbinden* (to bind books), *lesgeven* (to teach), *gelukwensen* (to congratulate), *televisiekijken* (to watch television), *schaatsenrijden* (to skate).

3 There are also many verbs whose prefix is adverbial rather than nominal, eg. *goed-, keuren* (to approve), *misrekenen* (to calculate incorrectly), *samengaan* (to go along), *tegemoetkomen* (to meet, fall in with), *teleurstellen* (to disappoint), *terechtzetten* (to set straight), *thuiskomen* (to come home), *weergeven* (to return, reproduce).

Tenses of separable verbs

When a separable verb is conjugated in the present and imperfect tenses and the imperative the prefix goes to the end of the clause:

\[
\text{meegaan} \quad \text{(to go along)} \quad \text{- hij gaat/ging vanmiddag mee}  \\
\text{opstaan} \quad \text{(to get up)} \quad \text{- sta onmiddellijk op!}
\]

These prefixes can, however, precede prepositional adjuncts in which case they do not have to stand at the very end of the clause:

\[
\text{Wij gingen samen weg na afloop van het programma.}
\]

In formal writing the prefix may go to the end of the clause in such cases, but the above is more common.

In the future tense or after modals the infinitive stays together at the end of the clause:

\[
\text{Ik zal je later opbellen.}  \\
\text{Hij moest me aan haar voorstellen.}
\]

When other verbs also stand at the end of the clause, there is a tendency (very common in speech) to split the separable verb and place the prefix before the other verbs:

\[
\text{Ik zou hem op kunnen bellen.}  \\
\text{Ik begrijp niet waarom je niet vroeger op had kunnen staan.}
\]

This is often avoided in more formal written style.

The past participle of separable verbs is formed by inserting *ge-* between the prefix and the verbal stem, eg. *voorstellen* = *voorgesteld*, *opgraven* = *opgegraven*. Such compound past participles are often split (particularly in speech) just like the infinitives above:

\[
\text{Ik weet dat hij je op heeft gebeld.}  \\
\text{Ik begrijp niet waarom hij niet mee is gegaan.}
\]

When the infinitive of a separable verb is accompanied by *te*, the *te* is placed between the prefix and the verb and the three parts are written separately, unlike German:

\[
\text{Hij hoopt zijn vakantie in Spanje door te brengen.}  \\
\text{(also door te kunnen brengen)}  \\
\text{Probeer voor middernacht terug te komen.}
\]

Note: Often confusion arises between separable verbs with prepositional prefixes and verbs followed by prepositional objects.

\[
\text{opkijken} \quad \text{- to look up; kijken op} \quad \text{- to look at (a watch)}  \\
\text{overschrijven} \quad \text{- to copy; schrijven over} \quad \text{- to write about}  \\
\text{doorlopen} \quad \text{- to continue walking; lopen door} \quad \text{- to walk through}
\]

A verb like *lopen* further complicates the issue because of the tendency for some prepositions to follow the object to which they refer in order to indicate a motion (see p. 219); such cases as *doorlopen* and *lopen door* look and sound the same but remain semantically different:

\[
\text{doorlopen}  \\
\text{ik liep gewoon door}  \\
\text{ik ben gewoon doorgegaan}
\]

\[
\text{lopen door}  \\
\text{ik liep door het bos}  \\
\text{ik liep het bos door}  \\
\text{ik ben door het bos gelopen}  \\
\text{ik ben het bos door gelopen}
\]

(see also p. 238)
11.22.2 INSEPARABLE VERBS

There are three sorts of inseparable prefixes:

1 Prefixes that can only be inseparable, eg. be-, er-, ge-, her-, ont-, ver-.

2 Prepositional prefixes which can also act as separable prefixes (see p. 180), eg. aan, door, mis (actually an adverb), om, onder, over, vol (actually an adverb), voor, weer (actually an adverb).

3 There are just a few compound verbs which do not separate but which, unlike the verbs in groups 1 & 2, bear the stress:

   beeldhouwen (to sculpt), glimlachen (to smile), knipogen (to wink), raadplegen (to consult), rangschikken (to arrange in order), stofzuigen (to vacuum clean), voetballen (to play football), waarschuwen (to warn).

All the verbs in groups 1 & 2 are conjugated like normal verbs in all tenses, never divide, and because they already contain an unstressed prefix, no ge- (a further unstressed prefix) is added to form the past participle:

   bij herstelde de televisie - hij heeft de televisie hersteld
   hij voorspeldde slecht weer - hij had slecht weer voorspeld

(The above accents should not be copied in writing; they are only to illustrate the stress.)

Verbs in group 3 do take ge-, but this does not go between the prefix and the verb as with separable verbs:

   ‘Wij hebben de hele dag gevoetbald.

It is not always possible to isolate the meaning of these prefixes but there are a few patterns which can be described:

Meaning of the prefixes in group 1 (those in group 2 and 3 are usually self-evident)

be- is an extremely common prefix and has a variety of functions:

a it can be used to make the intransitive verbs that take a prepositional object transitive, sometimes with a slight change in meaning,

   antwoorden op - beantwoorden (to answer), kijken naar - bekijken (to look at), luisteren naar (to listen to) - beleuisteren (to listen to), oordeelen over - beooredeelen (to judge, assess), spreken over (to talk about) - bespreken (to discuss).

   Also: eindigen (intr.) - beëindigen (trans.) (to finish, end).

b sometimes the verb assumes a slightly different meaning, as is often the case in group a, but here there is no question of a preposition being replaced,

   criticeren (to criticise) - becriticieren (= kritiek hebben op), denken (to think) - bedenken (to think of, devise, concoct), dienen (to serve God etc.) - bedienen (to serve, attend to guests, wait upon customers), groeten (to greet) - begroeten (to receive, welcome), rekenen (to do sums, count) - berekenen (to calculate, figure out), studeren (to learn, study a subject) - bestuderen (to analyse, study a book).

c in a few isolated cases the be- has no force at all and is merely a more formal form of the verb concerned

   hoeven - behoeven (to need + neg.),
   horen - behoren (to be fitting, proper).

Note: the verbs danken/bedanken (to thank) do not differ in meaning but do differ in usage.

   Ik dank u, meneer. (direct speech)
   Hij heeft haar lange bedankt.

er- is of German origin and is found in only three words and it is not possible to define a meaning,

   zich erbarmen over (to have pity on), erkennen (to acknowledge, recognize), erveren (to experience).

   West-Duitsland heeft de DDR erkend.

   West Germany has recognised the German Democratic Republic.

ge- is not a common prefix and its meaning avoids definition,

   geloven (to believe), gelijken (to resemble), zich gedragen (to behave), gebeuren (to happen).

   Ik heb hem niet geloofd.

   I didn’t believe him.

   Hij heeft zich slecht gedragen.

   He behaved disgracefully.

In the case of gelukken (to succeed) and geraken (to get, attain) the prefix is superfluous and is usually not used. As with behoeven and behoren (see above) the forms with ge- sound rather formal.

her- is very common and still productive. It is similar in meaning and function to English re- (i.e. again),

   heradverteren (to readvertise), herbenoemen (to reappoint), herkennen (to recognise), herschrijven (to rewrite).

   Ik heb mijn eigen moeder niet herkend.

   I didn’t recognise my own mother. (see er- above)
ont- basically means ‘away’ but this meaning is sometimes hard to isolate. It is a common prefix:

ontsnappen (to escape), ontkomen (to get away), ontstaan (to originate), ontploffen (to explode), ontmoeten (to meet).

ver- is the most common of all inseparable prefixes and has a variety of meanings and functions:

it commonly means ‘change’:

veranderen (to change), vertalen (to translate), verwisselen (to confuse), vernederlanden (to ‘dutchify’), verkopen (to sell), verhuren (to rent out), verhuizen (to move)

it also commonly means ‘wrong’ (in which case the verbs are usually reflexive):

zich vergissen (to make a mistake), zich verkijken (to look wrongly), zich vergespreken (to make an error in speech), zich verschijven (to make a mistake in writing)

it is used to make branden (to burn intr.) a transitive verb verbranden (to burn trans.):

ik heb de kist verbrand; hij brandde niet makkelijk

Examples of verbs in group 2 with prepositional prefixes:

It is impossible to give a complete list but the following will exemplify the concept. When the same compound exists as both a separable and an inseparable verb, the meaning of the former is usually more literal than that of the latter, eg. ondergaan – to go down, set (of the sun), ondergaan – to undergo:

aanvarden to accept
aanbieden to worship
doordénken to consider
doorzoeken to search
misbruiken to misuse, abuse
zich misdragen to misbehave
omschrijven to define
omvatten to comprise
onderbreiken to interrupt

ondermámen to undertake
overleven to survive
overtuigen to convince
volbringen to fulfill
voldoen to satisfy
voorkomen to prevent
voorspellen to predict
weerspiegelen to reflect
weerstaan to resist

verkomen to arrive at s.o.’s place
to belong together, go with (house and land)

boven to prefer to
door to replace by

verzinnen to invent

11.23 Verbs followed by prepositional objects

Some of the verbs below will be found under more than one preposition with a difference in meaning. Many verbs are followed by the same preposition in English and are thus not always included here. Others require no preposition in English but do in Dutch, eg. trouwen met – to marry, genieten van – to enjoy, houden van – to love. The verbs are grouped under the Dutch prepositions they are followed by in order to give the student a feeling for the use of the prepositions in Dutch. This approach then fulfills a function the dictionary does not.

aan
zich aanpassen to fit in with, assimilate
beantwoorden to correspond
behoren to belong to
besteden to spend on
bijdragen to contribute to
binden to tie to
dehenemen to take part in
doen to think of
doen denken to take part in, go in for (sport)
doen vergissen to remind of s.t.
doen geven to be irritated by
doen geloven to believe in (God)
doen grenzen to give to
doen hechten to border on
doen behoefté hebben to be in need of
doen hechten aan to believe in
doen herinneren to remind s.o. of
doen zich houden to stick to (an agreement)
doen laten zien to show to
doen leveren to send to
doen lijden to deliver to
doen lijden to suffer from (a disease)

bij
aankomen (behooren) to arrive at s.o.’s place
to belong together, go with (house and land)

boven
verkiezen to prefer to

aan

ontdoen
ontwikkelen
ontwikkelen
to take part in
to subject to
to evade (a tax etc.)
to borrow (words from Latin etc.)
to escape from
to transfer to
to hand over to
to die from
to die to
to send to
to attribute to
to entrust to
to add to
to tell s.t.
to tell s.o.
to satisfy (demands)
to precede s.t.
to introduce to
to get used to
to devote s.o. to
to blame s.o. for s.t.
to send to s.o.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nederlands</th>
<th>Vertaling</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>aankomen</td>
<td>to arrive at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>belangstellgen</td>
<td>to be interested in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bieten</td>
<td>to give (a part of something)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>beloven</td>
<td>to promise, to believe in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trekken/tegen</td>
<td>to feel like</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nemen</td>
<td>to succeed at, in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zich specialisten</td>
<td>to specialize in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mer (see note p. 189)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zich bemoeien</td>
<td>to mind (one's own business)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>condoleren</td>
<td>to console with someone on the s.t.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>feliciteren</td>
<td>to congratulate on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>akkoord gaan</td>
<td>to agree with</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gebeuren</td>
<td>to happen to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gehakwensen</td>
<td>to congratulate on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>overeenkomen</td>
<td>to correspond with, agree with the s.t.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>naaien</td>
<td>to sew at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>blaffen</td>
<td>to bark at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>geuren</td>
<td>to smell of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gluren</td>
<td>to smell of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gooien</td>
<td>to throw away</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>graven</td>
<td>to dig for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hunkeren</td>
<td>to be hungr for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kijken</td>
<td>to look at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>luisteren</td>
<td>to listen to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>oordelen</td>
<td>to judge from</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pikken</td>
<td>to pick at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rieken</td>
<td>to smell of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ruiken</td>
<td>to smell off</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schrijven/teken</td>
<td>to write to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>smaken</td>
<td>to taste of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>solliciteren</td>
<td>to apply for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>staren</td>
<td>to stare at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>om</td>
<td>to beg for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bedelen</td>
<td>to envy s.o. s.t.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>benijden</td>
<td>to think of, remember</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>denken</td>
<td>to care about</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>geven</td>
<td>to give for, about s.t.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(glimlachen) 29</td>
<td>to smile at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>veranderen</td>
<td>to change into</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zich verliezen</td>
<td>to go deeply into, lose s.o. in (one's work)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>geïnteresseerd</td>
<td>to be interested in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zijn</td>
<td>to divide into</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verzoeken</td>
<td>to divide into</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>oorzielen (in een behoefte)</td>
<td>to satisfy a need</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verzoeken</td>
<td>to divide into</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>overeenstemmen</td>
<td>to be in keeping with</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>praten</td>
<td>to talk to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spotten</td>
<td>to scoff at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spreken</td>
<td>to speak to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rouwen</td>
<td>to speak to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vergelijken</td>
<td>to live with</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wenen</td>
<td>to agree with s.o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>het eens zijn</td>
<td>to agree with s.o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stinken</td>
<td>to stink of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stienen 29</td>
<td>to strive for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sturen 29</td>
<td>to send to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>uitstapen</td>
<td>to look out for, look forward to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>er uitzien</td>
<td>to look like</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>uitzien</td>
<td>to look forward to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verlagen</td>
<td>to look forward to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vertrekken</td>
<td>to look forward to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>verwijzen</td>
<td>to leave, depart for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vissen</td>
<td>to refer to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vragen</td>
<td>to refer to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vragen</td>
<td>to refer to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vragen</td>
<td>to refer to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vragen</td>
<td>to refer to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vragen</td>
<td>to refer to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zoeken</td>
<td>to look for (near optional)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>onder</td>
<td>to suffer under, by (e.g. a regime)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lijden</td>
<td>to suffer under, by (e.g. a regime)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>op</td>
<td>to insist on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aandringen</td>
<td>to subscribe to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zich aandringen</td>
<td>to answer to a question</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>antwoorden</td>
<td>to appeal to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zich antwoorden</td>
<td>to be founded, based on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>berusten</td>
<td>to drink to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>drinken</td>
<td>to drink to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dutten</td>
<td>to point to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gooien</td>
<td>to bet on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>klagen</td>
<td>to be critical of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kritiek hebben</td>
<td>to be critical of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>betrekking hebben</td>
<td>to be embodied to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>recht hebben</td>
<td>to be embodied to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hopen</td>
<td>to hope for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ingaan</td>
<td>to go forward into a matter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jagen</td>
<td>to jum at (after)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kijken</td>
<td>to look at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>klimmen</td>
<td>to hit upon, think of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kamen</td>
<td>to hit upon, think of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lijken</td>
<td>to hit upon, think of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>letten</td>
<td>to hit upon, think of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>letteren</td>
<td>to hit upon, think of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kunnen</td>
<td>to hit upon, think of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>maken</td>
<td>to hit upon, think of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>neerkomen</td>
<td>to hit upon, think of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>passen</td>
<td>to hit upon, think of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>reageren</td>
<td>to hit upon, think of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>over</td>
<td>to have at one's disposal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>beschikken</td>
<td>to decide on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bekijken</td>
<td>to get irritated at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zich ergernen</td>
<td>to cry about</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>huilen</td>
<td>to cry about</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>klagen</td>
<td>to complain about</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>peinen</td>
<td>to think about, ponder on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>praten</td>
<td>to talk about</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zich druk maken</td>
<td>to get excited, make a fuss about</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mopperen</td>
<td>to grumble about</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nadenken</td>
<td>to grumble about</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tegen</td>
<td>to think about</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>glimlachen</td>
<td>to smile at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>knikken</td>
<td>to nod at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>opzien</td>
<td>to look up to s.o., dread s.t.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rullen</td>
<td>to exchange for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spreken</td>
<td>to speak to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zeggen</td>
<td>to speak to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rekenen</td>
<td>to rely on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>richten</td>
<td>to rely on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schatten</td>
<td>to rely on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schieten</td>
<td>to rely on</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>staan</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>storten</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>terreskomen</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zicht roekelen</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>toepassen</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trakken</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zich verheugen</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zicht verlaken</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>veroveren</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vertrouwen</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vestigen</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>volgen</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zich voorbereiden</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vuren</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vielen</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wachten</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wedden</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wijzen</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ja zeggen</td>
<td>to value at</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

29 schrijven, saren, zenden aan someone, but naar a country. One will also hear naar someone.
30 to laugh at s.o. = iemand uitlaugen.
tot (see note p. 189)
aansporen to incite, urge to
dienen to do duty as, serve as
aanleiding geven to give cause for
kiezen to choose for, as
zich richten to apply to
toeleten to admit to (university)
veroordelen to condemn to
zich wenden to turn to s.o.
bemoeien to contribute to
uit afleiden to infer from
bestaan to consist
drinken to drink from
komen to come from (a country)
onstaan to arise, spring from
van afhangen to depend on
afstammen to be descended from
baken to be fed up with
barsten to burst with
beroven to deprive of
beben to tremble with
bewijzen to liberate, free from
blozen to blush with
genieten to enjoy
houwen to like
hulpen to cry with
krioelen to swarm, teem with
leven to live on
voor bezwijken to succumb, yield to
bezaaien to sow
bezorgen to pay for, as
belastingheffing to be interested in
hebben to be afraid of
zieh hoeden to beware of, guard against
zieh reizen to be interested in
in aanmerking komen to be considered for
zieh in acht nemen to be on one's guard against

Note on met/mee, tot/toe:

When verbs followed by met or tot govern a noun or pronominal object there is no complication.

Ik heb jouw moeder met de mijne vergeleken.
De vakbond heeft de mannen tot staken aangezet.

When the noun or pronoun is replaced by a pronominal er, hier or daar (see p. 56, 236) or the relative waar (see p. 63) the alternative forms mee and toe must be used.

Ik heb ze daarmee vergeleken.
Zij hebben ze ertoe aangespoord.
De pen waar ik de brief mee schreef, is kapot.
12 Conjunctions (voegwoorden)

The distinction between conjunctions and certain sorts of adverbs is sometimes difficult to make. This section deals thus with those words, whether they be classed as conjunctions or adverbs, that join two or more clauses in a sentence.

12.1 Co-ordinating conjunctions (nevenschikkende voegwoorden)

The main distinguishing feature of a co-ordinating conjunction in Dutch is that it does not have any effect on the word-order of the following clause.

- en \(^1\) — and
- want \(^2\) — for, because
- of \(^3\) — or
- maar — but
- doch (lit.) \(^5\) — but, nevertheless
- dus \(^6\) — thus, therefore
- alleen (lit.) \(^5\) — only, but

\(\text{Ik ben zeer arm maar ik heb toch een auto.}
\text{Kom je vandaag of kom je morgen?}
\text{Hij heeft het beloofd doch hij heeft het niet gedaan.}\)

Notes

1 Note the following English conjunctional constructions with ‘and’ are avoided in Dutch.

\(\text{We went and sat down.}
\text{They then went and sang a song together.}
\text{He is sitting outside (and) reading a book.}\)

2 The conjunction ‘for’ is rather formal in English and is usually replaced by ‘because’; in Dutch the reverse is the case, however. A sentence such as ‘he dropped the cup because it was hot’ would usually be rendered as \(\text{hij liet het kopje vallen want het was heet, although omdat plus subordinate word-order would be quite correct too.}\)

3 In more formal speech or writing of is often replaced by ofwel or oftewel (lit.), particularly with the meaning ‘or... either’.

\(\text{Hij liet het kopje vallen \text{ want het was heet, although omdat plus subordinate word-order would be quite correct too.}}\)

4 \(\text{Het scheelde niet veel of hij was overreden.}
\text{It wasn’t long before they stopped in front of a large iron gate.}\)

5 The co-ordinating conjunctions doch and alleen are usually replaced by the adverbial conjunctions toch and alleen in the spoken language (see p. 199).
12.2 Subordinating conjunctions (onderschikkenae voegwoorden)

There is a large number of such conjunctions, most of which are listed below. The distinguishing feature of these is that the verb of the dependent clause is sent to the end of that clause. The following pitfalls with subordinating conjunctions should be noted.

Beware of the word-order when a subordinating conjunction governs two subordinate clauses which are joined by a co-ordinating conjunction.

I stayed home because I was sick and (because I) didn’t want to go to the fair.
Ik bleef thuis, omdat ik ziek was en (omdat) niet naar de kermis wilde gaan.

How glad she was when she heard his voice and (when she) saw his face.
Wat was ze blij, toen zij zijn stem hoorde en (toen ze) zijn gezicht zag.

Our friends had told us (that) it was a very interesting place and (that) we could easily spend a few days there.
Onze kennissen hadden ons verteld, dat het een zeer interessante plaats was en (dat) we er makkelijk een paar dagen zouden kunnen doorbrengen.

When a co-ordinating conjunction is followed by a subordinating conjunction, the subordinating one governs the word-order of the following clause, but not that of the co-ordinating clause; the subject and verb of the following co-ordinate clause invert because the subordinate clause takes on the role of first idea.

Ik blijf thuis en omdat ik me misselijk voel, ga ik naar bed.

Sometimes a subordinate clause can be inserted into another, in which case one must remember to put the verb of the interrupted clause to the end when one returns to it.

Ik vind ook dat als je een andere taal leert, je gewoonlijk je eigen taal beter kunt begrijpen.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>dat1</td>
<td>that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>voordat, voor2</td>
<td>before (see also p. 201)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eerder, eer (lit.)</td>
<td>before</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nadat, na2</td>
<td>after (see also p. 201)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>totdat, tot</td>
<td>until</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>omdat3</td>
<td>because</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zodat4</td>
<td>so that (result)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>opdat4</td>
<td>so that (purpose)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>doordat</td>
<td>by, because (see also p. 201)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mede doordat</td>
<td>also because</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in plaats van dat</td>
<td>instead of (see also p. 201)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zonder dat</td>
<td>without (see also p. 201)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>behalve dat</td>
<td>except that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zodanig dat</td>
<td>such that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vandaar dat</td>
<td>for that reason, thus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alsmede dat</td>
<td>as well as (the fact that)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inzoverre (re) dat</td>
<td>to the extent that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zoals8</td>
<td>(just) as</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alsof9</td>
<td>as if</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>als2,5,6,8,9</td>
<td>when, if</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wanneer2,6</td>
<td>when, whenever</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>toen6</td>
<td>when</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>indien (lit.5)</td>
<td>if</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>daar (lit.)</td>
<td>since, because</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aangezien</td>
<td>since, because, seeing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>terwijl7</td>
<td>while, whereas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ofschoon</td>
<td>although</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schoon (lit.)</td>
<td>since (temporal)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(al) hoewel</td>
<td>now that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sinds</td>
<td>as soon as</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sedert</td>
<td>as long as</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nu</td>
<td>as far as</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zodra</td>
<td>just as (= net zoals)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zolang</td>
<td>just as little as, no more than</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(voor)over</td>
<td>unless</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gelijk (lit.)</td>
<td>provided that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>evenals</td>
<td>whereas, since</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>evenmin als</td>
<td>whether</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tensij</td>
<td>whether or whether</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mits</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vermits (lit.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of dat9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>onverschillig of</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>naar10</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>naarmate</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>naar gelang</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nlet tegenstaande</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ingeval</td>
<td>notwithstanding that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in case, in the event (that)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The following is a list of commonly used phrases/clauses that introduce subordinate clauses:

daar staat tegenover dat
stel/veronderstel/gesteld (lit.) dat
tegen de tijd dat
dat neemt niet weg dat
dat wil (niet) zeggen dat
dat maakt dat
gezien het feit dat
ondanks het feit dat
voor het geval dat
daar komt (nog) bij dat
laat staan dat/als/wanneer
't toeval wilde dat
met dien verstande dat

on the other hand
let's say/assume (that)
by the time (that)
that does not alter the fact that
that means (doesn't mean) that
that means that, has as a result that
as, in the light of the fact that
in spite of the fact that
in case
in additional
let alone that/if/when
chance would have it that
on the understanding that

Notes

1 dat

Note that 'that' is often omitted in English but never in Dutch.

He said he would come.
He zei dat hij komen zou.
The first time she said it.
De eerste keer dat ze het zei.

In uncultivated speech a superfluous dat is sometimes used after other subordinate conjunctions and interrogative adverbs in indirect questions.

Ik weet niet waar dat ze wonen.
I don't know where they live.
Nu dat ik rijk ben, ...
Now (that) I am rich, ...

It is, for example, very common after naarmate, naar gelang and niet tegenstaande.

A rather idiomatic usage of dat is the following:

Een stank dat er was!
There was a terrible smell!
En eten dat hij kan!
How he can eat!

Note also the use of dat in the following instances where it could be confused with the relative pronoun:

De tweede keer dat hij kwam.
The second time he came.
Dit is een pot uit de tijd dat er nog geen blanken hier leefden.
This is a pot from the time that/before there were any whites living here.

2 The conjunctions voordat and nadat are commonly preceded by kort (shortly before/after), daags (the day before/after) and lang (long before/after).

Wanneer and als (meaning 'when') are commonly preceded by pas (only when), zelfs (even when) and vooral (especially when).

3 For substitution of omdat with want see p. 190.

4 In colloquial Dutch the subtle distinction between zodat and opdat is often ignored and zodat is used in both senses.

Het heeft de hele dag geregend zodat we niet uit konden gaan.
De regering heeft het bedrag van de steun verhoogd opdat de armsten geen honger zullen lijden.

5 As in English, als/indien (if) in conditional sentences can be omitted in higher style and the clause can begin with the verb; the main clause is then always introduced by dan.

Had he come, we could have done it./If he had come, we could have done it.
Was hij gekomen, dan hadden wij het kunnen doen./Als hij gekomen was, hadden wij het kunnen doen.
Should war come, then we'll leave Germany./If war comes, we'll leave Germany.
Komt er oorlog, dan zullen we Duitsland verlaten./Als er oorlog komt, zullen we Duitsland verlaten.

6 The translation of English 'when' into Dutch is a complex issue. There are three words: wanneer, als, toen.

Wanneer is always used in interrogative clauses both direct and indirect.

Wanneer komt hij thuis? Ik weet niet wanneer hij thuiskomt.

It is also used to translate 'when' in subordinate clauses when the verb is in the present, future or prefect tense. In this case it can be substituted by als.

Wanneer (als) het regent, wil ik thuishouden.

It can only be used in a clause with the verb in the imperfect or pluperfect when it...
means 'whenever', otherwise toen is used (see below). This wanneer can also be replaced by als.

\[
\text{Wanneer (als) hij thuiskwam was ik altijd boos op hem.}
\]

Als, apart from replacing wanneer in instances such as the above, also renders 'if' (not the 'if' which means 'whether', see of), in which case an ambiguity can arise.

\[
\text{Als het regent, wil ik thuis blijven.}
\]

When/if it rains, ...

See 9 below for als as an abbreviation of alsof. See Prepositions for als as a preposition (p. 206).

Toen replaces wanneer/als when the verb is in the imperfect or the pluperfect, i.e. when the meaning is 'when on one occasion'. Wanneer/als are, however, used when the verb is in the imperfect or the pluperfect and the meaning is 'whenever', i.e. 'when on repeated occasions'.

\[
\text{Toen hij thuiskwam, was ik al weg.}
\]

Compare: \[
\text{Wanneer (als) hij thuiskwam, was ik altijd al weg.}
\]

\[
\text{Ik heb de brief meteen gepost toen ik hem geschreven had.}
\]

Note: There is also an adverb toen (then) which should not be confused with the conjunction toen (when). (see p. 105)

\[
\text{Toen ging hij weg.}
\]
\[
\text{Toen hij wegging, ...}
\]
\[
\text{He then left.}
\]
\[
\text{When he left, ...}
\]

7 Terwijl often helps one out of certain difficult English verbal -ing constructions. (see p. 169)

\[
\text{Walking around in town I bumped into him.}
\]
\[
\text{Terwijl ik in de stad rondliep, ben ik hem tegengekomen.}
\]

8 Als as a subordinating conjunction has a variety of meanings:

'when, whenever' (see note 6 above)

'if', in which case it can be omitted (see note 5 and 6 above)

'as long as', in which case it replaces zolang.

\[
\text{Het kan me niet schelen hoe, als je het maar doet.}
\]

I don't care how, so long as you do it.

'as', in which case it can be confused with zoals — not a common usage.

\[
\text{Als volgt. — As follows.}
\]

'than', used after comparatives (often followed by simple nouns and pronouns rather than clauses). In this sense it is considered rather colloquial and should be replaced by dan.

\[
\text{Hij is groter als (dan) ik.}
\]
\[
\text{Hij deed het beter als (dan) ik het had kunnen doen.}
\]

Als also can be used as an adverbial conjunction replacing the subordinating conjunction alsof.

\[
\text{Hij deed als hoorde hij me niet.}
\]

He pretended he didn't hear me.

\[
\text{(doen alsof renders 'to pretend')}
\]
\[
\text{Ze liepen als vreesden zij voor hun leven.}
\]

They were walking as if they were afraid for their lives.

Also:

\[
\text{Toen lachte hij als om zich te verontschuldigen.}
\]

Then he laughed as if to apologize.

Als can also be a preposition meaning 'as':

\[
\text{Als kind werkte ik in een goudmijn.}
\]

As a child I worked in a gold mine.

\[
\text{Ik gebruikte het als asbak.}
\]

I used it as an ashtray.

\[
\text{Zich gedragen als een heer.}
\]

To behave as (like) a gentleman.

\[
\text{lemand erkennen als koning.}
\]

To recognize someone as king.

Zoals can only be used as a subordinate conjunction whereas als has both adverbial and prepositional functions in addition to that of a conjunction.

(such) as, in such a way as

\[
\text{Hij zong zoals hij nog nooit gezongen heeft.}
\]

He sang (such) as he has never sung before.

\[
\text{as Zoals je weet, ga ik ook mee.}
\]

As you know, I'm going too.

\[
\text{Net zoals ik gezegd heb, ...}
\]

Just as I said,...
12.3 Adverbial conjunctions

Grammatically speaking these words are adverbs but they often function as conjunctions introducing clauses. Their adverbial qualities are, however, obvious from the word-order which follows, i.e. inversion of subject and verb so that the verb remains the second idea (the adverb being the first).

9 Alsof — as if

Very often the als is dropped and of maintains the full meaning of 'as if'.

Het ziet er naar uit of het gaat regenen.
It looks as if it is going to rain.

Somewhat less common is just als meaning alsof but in this case als acts as an adverbial conjunction.

Hij deed als hoorde hij het niet.
He pretended (acted as if) he didn’t hear it.

Of as a subordinating conjunction can mean:
whether (note that 'or whether' is of dat to avoid a double of)

as if', in which case it replaces alsof (see above)

It is often used superfluously after interrogative adverbs and pronouns in indirect questions (see p. 203) in much the same way as dat is sometimes used (see p. 194, 203). This practice should not be copied.

Ik weet niet wat of ze kan doen.
I don’t know what she can do.

Note the following example which contains both a superfluous of and dat: ik weet niet wie of dat er zal komen — I don’t know who will come.

For further uses of of see the footnote to of as a co-ordinate conjunction.

10 Naar is only found in higher style and usually in set expressions.

Naar ik meen.
As I believe.
Duidelijk is het, naar ik meen, dat het een mengtaal is.
It is clear, I believe, that it is a mixed language.

Men zegt.
It is said.

Vermeld.
It is rumoured.

12.4 Correlative conjunctions

Correlative conjunctions are couplets of conjunctions that correlate two clauses of a sentence, i.e. each clause begins with a conjunction that forms a sense pair with the other. They can be classified as follows:

1 those that act as co-ordinating conjunctions in both parts of the sentence
2 those that act as adverbial conjunctions in both parts of the sentence
3 a few that don’t fit into groups 1 or 2
hetzij... of
dan... of
(nech)... noch
zowel... als (ook)
(én)... en
niet alleen... maar ook

Hetzij hij komt morgen of hij komt niet./Hij komt hetzij morgen of niet.

(óf) je doet het goed, óf je doet het helemaal niet.

Zowel de hoogleraar als (ook) de student hebben het boek gelezen.

(En) de leraar en de leerlingen mogen gratis naar binnen.

Niet alleen de leraar heeft het boek gelezen maar ook de student.

Notes
1 Nu zie je het wel, dan zie je het niet.
Enerzijds wil hij werken, anderzijds wil hij nog blijven studeren.

1.4.3 There are four correlative conjunctions that are at odds with the patterns described in group 1 and 2.

Notes
1 nauwelijks... of scarcely/hardly... when

The first half acts an an adverb, the second as a co-ordinate conjunction. This rather idiomatic use of co-ordinate of has other parallels (see p. 191).

Nauwelijks was ik thuis of mijn vader belde me op.

2 niet alleen... maar ook not only... but

As with 1, the first half acts as an adverb, the second as a co-ordinate conjunction. There is, however, also a similar co-ordinate correlative conjunction (see p. 200).

Niet alleen heeft hij het boek verloren maar hij heeft me er ook niet voor betaald.

3 hoe... des te the... the

Although synonymous, these two correlative couplets require a different word order:

hie... des te (sub. conj. + adv. conj.)
hoe... hoe (sub. conj. + sub. conj.)

Hoe meer je studeert des te meer zul je weten.
Hoe meer je studeert hoe meer je weten zult.

12.4.2 ADVERBIAL CORRELATIVE CONJUNCTIONS

In this case the finite verb in each part of the sentence follows the conjunction.

nu... dan
nu eens... dan weer
de ene keer... de andere keer
enerzijds... anderzijds
aan de ene kant... aan de andere kant
deels... deels
ten dele... ten dele
gedeeltelijk... gedeeltelijk

one moment... the next

In order to (see p. 157)
Hij ging naar huis om zijn fiets te halen.
He went home (in order) to fetch his bike.

Teneinde moeilijkheden te voorkomen wordt men vriendelijk verzocht dieren buiten te laten.
(In order) to avoid difficulties, you are kindly requested to leave animals outside.

Door dat te doen bereik je niets.
By doing that, you will accomplish nothing.

Na urenlang gewerkt te hebben, ben ik naar de bioscoop gegaan.
After having worked for hours I went to the cinema.

Men wordt vriendelijk verzocht zijn sigaret te doen alvorens de bioscoop in te gaan.
You are kindly requested to extinguish your cigarette before entering the cinema.

Notes

1 For use of te with or without om see p. 154, 157.

2 Alvorens and na + infinitive clause can always be replaced by voordat and nadat + subordinate clause, as in English.

   Nadat ik urenlang had gewerkt, ging ik naar de bioscoop.
   After I had worked for hours I went to the cinema.

3 In uncultivated speech door is often replaced by met.

   Met van een ladder te vallen, kun je je been breken.

4 In plaats van and zonder differ in usage from in plaats van dat and zonder dat: when the subject of both clauses is the same, the infinitive clause construction must be used; when the subjects are different, however, the appropriate subordinating conjunction must be used.

   Hij ging weg zonder een woord te zeggen.
   Hij kwam binnen zonder dat ik hem zag.

   In plaats van op te staan, bleef hij zitten.
   Ik moet het alleen doen in plaats van dat mijn broer me helpt.

12.6 Interrogative adverbs and pronouns introducing indirect questions

Although these words are not strictly speaking conjunctions, they function nevertheless as subordinating conjunctions (see p. 72, 109).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>wat</td>
<td>what</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wanneer</td>
<td>when</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>waarom</td>
<td>why</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wie</td>
<td>who</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>welk(e)</td>
<td>which</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hoe</td>
<td>how</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hoeveel</td>
<td>how much</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in hoever(re)</td>
<td>to what extent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>waar</td>
<td>where</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>waar...heen</td>
<td>where...to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>waar...vandaan</td>
<td>where...from</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>waar + prep.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Question: Wat heeft hij in zijn hand?
Answer: Ik weet niet wat hij in zijn hand heeft.

Question: Waar komt ze vandaan?
Answer: Ik weet niet waar ze vandaan komt.

Question: Welke boeken hebben ze gelezen?
Hij vroeg welke boeken ze gelezen hadden.
Ik weet niet in hoeverre dat mogelijk zal zijn.

Note: Often a superfluous subordinating of or dat is used after these words in colloquial speech. The practice should be avoided. (see also p. 198)

   Ik vroeg me af hoe of ze dat had kunnen doen.
   Ik weet niet waar of ze de bruiloft willen houden.
   Kun je me zeggen waar dat hij woont?

The same words are used as subordinating conjunctions in combination with ook to express ‘whoever’, ‘ wherever’ etc. (see p. 69)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>wie...ook</td>
<td>whoever</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>waar...ook</td>
<td>wherever</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wat...ook</td>
<td>whatever</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hoe...ook</td>
<td>however¹</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>welk(e)...ook</td>
<td>whichever</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

¹ Note that the English adverb ‘however’ is echter.

   Hij heeft het echter niet kunnen doen.
He wasn’t able to do it, however.
Because prepositions are the most idiomatic part of speech, each with a vast number of meanings in many cases, the following list can only serve as a guide to the usage of Dutch prepositions. To have listed English prepositions with their various translations into Dutch would have been unwieldy and the student would have been prevented from getting a feeling for the nuances of Dutch prepositions. By doing the reverse it is hoped a certain pattern in the usage of individual Dutch prepositions will emerge and facilitate the learning of such. It will be noted that they are often used as adverbs too. Only the most usual or basic meanings of each preposition in English are given next to the Dutch form.

**$à -$**  
- to, at
- drie à vier weken  
- à 5%  
- à f 10 per stuk

**aan**  
- on, at
- This preposition is often confused by English speakers with op. In as far as its meaning can be defined at all, one can say that a vertical ‘on’ is rendered by aan (a horizontal ‘on’ by op, however) and ‘on’ or ‘at’ the edge of things is also aan.

- het schilderij aan de muur  
- aan het plafond  
- geen ster aan de hemel  
- iemand aan de deur  
- een klop aan (op) de deur  
- aan de kust  
- aan zee (compare op)  
- aan het strand (compare op)  
- aan land gaan  
- aan tafel (compare op)  
- aan de Rijn  
- mijn huis staat aan (op) een gracht  
- aan de kerk  
- aan de telefoon  
- jij bent aan de beurt

The picture on the wall  
on the ceiling  
o star in the sky  
somebody at the door  
a knock at the door  
on the coast  
at the seaside  
at the beach  
to go on land  
at the table  
on the Rhine  
my house is on a canal  
on the left-hand side  
on the telephone  
it is your turn
ik ben hard aan het werk aan de universiteit (compare op)
wat had zij voor kleren aan?
Ik heb een gouden ring aan (see om)
de lamp/het fornuis is aan blind aan een oog
doof aan een oor
een gebrek aan
een behoefte aan
ze weten niet wat ze aan je hebben hoelau heb je aan belasting betaald?
f2000 aan sieraden
ik herkende hem aan (door) zijn stem
verbeteringen aan het huis
ik kan er niets aan doen
ik heb er niets aan
achter - behind, after
achter het huis
hij zit de hele dag achter zijn bureau
ik heb het volk achter me
de deur achter zich sluiten
mijn horloge loopt achter
schrijf M.A. achter je naam
tien achter elkaar
afgezien van - apart from, except for
afgezien daarvan
daalov van mijn broer
aldus - according to (see volgens)
Found in journalese and formal style. It can only be followed by a noun or name; if a clause follows the noun, volgens is used.
.... aldus de minister-president
als - as (see conjunctions)
als kind
ik wil het als asbak gebruiken
zich gedragen als een dame
at the beginning/end
I am hard at work
at the university (i.e. studying there)
what sort of clothes did she have on?
I have a golden ring on
the light/stove is on
blind in one eye
deaf in one ear
a lack of
a need for
they don't know what you're worth
what did you pay in tax?
f2000 in jewels
I recognised him by his voice
improvements to the house
I can do nothing about it
it's useless to me
behalve - except (for)
wie gaat behalve ik (subj. pronoun)
wie zag je behalve hem (obj. pron.)
behalve in de zomer
behalve mijn moeder gaat ook mijn oma
beneden — beneath, under
beneden mijn waardigheid
dat is beneden me
beneden de Moerdijk
beneden de veertig
bij — by, near, at
Often preceded by vlak/dicht to render English 'near', (see p. 93)
vlak bij het stadhuis
bij het postkantoor
ik woon bij (aan) het water
hij heeft geen geld bij zich
ik woon bij mijn tante
ik kom zo bij u
wij horen bij elkaar
iemand bij zijn naam roepen
iemand bij de hand nemen
bij de tandarts, groenteboer
iemand bij zijn naam roepen
iemand bij de hand nemen
bij de tandarts, groenteboer
ik heb het bij V en D gekocht
bij mooi weer
bij een oostelijke wind
bij honderden
twee bij drie meter
de slag bij Waterloo
bij het ontbijt
wenst u een koekje bij de koffie?
doe een kaartje bij de bloemen
les nemen bij iemand
bij uitstek
examen doen bij iemand
ik heb het bij Dickens gelezen
ik ben bij Tiel-Utrecht verzekerd
bij een firma werken
who is going apart from me
whom did you see apart from him
except (for) in summer
as well as my mother my grandma is going to
beneath my dignity
that is beneath me
south of the Moerdijk
under forty
near the town hall
near the post-office
I live near the water
I live at my aunt's/with my aunt
I'll be with you in a moment
we are/belong together
to call someone by name
to take someone by the hand
at the dentist's, greengrocer's
I bought it at V & D (a shop)
when the weather is nice
when an easterly is blowing
by the hundreds
two by three metres
the Battle of Waterloo
at breakfast
do you want a biscuit with your coffee?
put a card in with the flowers
to have lessons from someone
par excellence
to do an exam for someone (i.e. a particular teacher)
I read it in Dickens
I'm insured with Tiel-Utrecht
to work for a firm
bij een bezoek aan het museum
bij nader inzien
bij zichzelf denken
bij het raam/vuur zitten
bij de volgende halte uitstappen

binnen — within, in(side)

binnen het huis
binnen een week
binnen het bestek van dit boek

boven — above, over

boven de waterspiegel
je vliegt urenlang boven Australië
het ging boven mijn pet
Zaandam ligt boven Amsterdam
hij is boven de 50
ik geef de voorkeur aan een V.W. boven alle andere auto's

buiten — out of, beyond

buiten de stad
buiten gevaar
buiten beschouwing laten
buiten mijn competentie
ik kan niet buiten hem (see zonder)
buiten haar bestond er niets voor hem
(see behalve)

dank zij — thanks to
dank zij jou
dank zij het mooie weer

door — through, by (see also p. 161)
door heel Nederland
door de week
hij liep (dwars) door het bos
door (een) rood licht (heen) rijden
het is door haar geschreven
ik heb hem door Anneke leren kennen

on a visit to the museum
on closer examination
to think to oneself
to sit by the window/fire
to get out at the next stop

inside the house
within a week
within the scope of this book

above water level
you fly over Australia for hours
it was above my head, beyond me
Z'dam is north of A'dam
he's over fifty
I prefer a V.W. to all other cars

out of town
out of danger
to leave out of consideration
beyond my competence
I can't do without him
apart from her nothing existed for him

thanks to you
thanks to the nice weather

throughout Holland
during the week
he walked (right) through the forest
to drive through a red light
it was written by her
I got to know him through Anneke

door en door storm
door en door een dame

gedurende — during (see tijdens)
gedurende het weekeinde
hij was gedurende 3 weken ziek (formal)
in — in, into

hij zit in zijn auto
ben je ooit in Engeland geweest?
in het Nederlands etc.
vertaal dit in het Frans
in het algemeen (see over)
5 meter in de breedte
in de bus, tram, trein
hij zit in een boek te lezen
hij heeft zich in de vinger gesneden
de slang heeft in zijn been gebeten
in een boom klimmen
in tweeën snijden
er gaan 16 ons in een Engels pond
hij is in de zestig
er waren in de 50 mensen
in het weekend

vrij — free
jegens (lit.) — to(wards)
onze plicht jegens onze ouders
eerlijk zijn jegens mensen

krachtens (lit.) — by virtue of
krachtens deze wet
krachtens mijn ambt
langs — along, past
langs het kanaal
ik reed langs jouw huis
langs een andere route/weg (see via)
kom een keer bij me langs

very stupid
a real lady

during the weekend
he was sick for 3 weeks

he is in his car
have you ever been to England?
in Dutch etc.
translate this into French
in general, generally
five metres wide
on the bus, tram, train
he's reading a book
he cut his finger
the snake bit his leg
to climb a tree
to cut into two
there are 16 ounces to an English pound
he's in his sixties
there were fifty odd people
at the weekend

our duty to our parents
to be honest with people

under this law
by virtue of my position/office

along the canal
I drove past your house
via another route/road
come and visit me some time
met — with
we waren met z'n tweeën
dat de post
met de auto, tram etc.
dat dit weer
met potlood schrijven
met Pasen, Kerstmiss
ik ben met vakantie (see op)
een zak met geld
met of zonder (mayonnaise)

When used with pronominal er (p. 189, 236) or as a prefix with separable verbs (p. 180) met becomes mee. In formal style it also occurs as mede in separable verbs, eg. mededelen = mededelen — to inform.

na — after
na het avondeten
na achteren
A. is de grootste stad na Londen
donwegen na de grootste stad
na ontvangst van
de een na de ander
regel na regel

naar — to (places), (see aan)
naar A. na
naar huis
naar boven, beneden, binnen,
buiten
naar bed
naar school (see op)
naar Parijs vertrekken
een steen naar iemand/sec iets goeden
naar iets grijpen
hij werd naar zijn vader genoemd
naar mijn mening
een film naar een roman van Dickens

naast — next to
hij woont naast mij
naast borduren doet ze ook veel aan
haken

there were two of us
by mail
by car, tram etc.
in this weather
to write in pencil
at Easter, Christmas time
I'm on holidays
a bag of money
with or without (mayonnaise — when buying chips)

after dinner
after eight
after London A. is the biggest city
the third largest city
on receipt of
one after another
rule after rule

I'm going to A'dam
I'm going home
I'm going upstairs, downstairs, inside, outside
to bed
to school
to leave for Paris
to throw a stone at s.o./s.t.
to grab at s.t.
his was named after his father
in my opinion
a film of a book by Dickens

he lives next to me
apart from embroidery she also does a lot of crochet

namens — on behalf of
ik spreek namens alle aanwezigen

in spite of (see ondanks)
in spite of the bad weather

om — around, for
we zaten allemaal om de tafel
om de hoek
de aarde draait om zijn as
ik kan de kinderen niet om me hebben
om zich (eenen) kijken
om tien uur
om de twee weken
om de andere boom
om de tijd is om
om oog om oog, tand om tand
om welke reden
het niet om mijzelf maar om jou

I have a belt/tie/necklace on
an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth
for what reason
not for/because of myself but for/because of you

ondanks — in spite of
ondanks zijn ziekte
desondanks

onder — under
onder het huis
bekend onder een andere naam
onder Koning Willem I
onder mijn voorvader
onder de Duitse bezetting
onder ons blijven
je bent onder vrienden
onder andere
onder het avondeten
onder het leven ontdekte hij...
en een dorpe onder A'dam
hij is onder de 40
onder de 50 minuten

under(neath) the house
well-known under another name
under King William I
under my predecessor
during the German occupation
to remain between us
you're among friends
among other things
during dinner
while reading he discovered...
a village south of A'dam
he is under forty
under 50 minutes
ongeacht – regardless of
ongeacht het land van oorsprong
regardless of one's land of origin
op – on
In its basic meaning of ‘on’ Dutch op designates a horizontal ‘on’ (see aan for vertical ‘on’). Otherwise its meanings are too diverse to define.
op (de) tafel
on the table
at school
at the office
at sea
in the country
on the corner
at the university (i.e. the campus)
in the hall
at the bank/market
at the postoffice/station
at the beach
in the fore-, background
the second largest ship in the world
in the photo
at rush-hour
he's working in a factory
I live in a room in town
at a party
on an island
in Iceland, Java, Crete (i.e. islands)
in the second picture
to invite s.o. to coffee
to invite s.o. to a wedding
to invite s.o. to dinner
he only had five cents on him
on holidays
in this way
in search of
to hire/purchase
an attack on
a toast to the queen
he is dying
à la française etc.
at the earliest/latest
in tune to the music

op een w tank van mij
op de radio/T.V.
op één voorwaarde
als kind heb ik op klompen gelopen
ze kookt op gas
op de fiets (also met)
op een hoogte van 2000 meter
een op de 50 (mensen etc.)
eén telefoon op elke 50 inwoners
mijn auto rijdt een op 10
op twintigjarige leeftijd
(op) de 23e
mijn geld is op
er is geen geld op de rekening

over – over, via, about:
het vliegtuig vliegt over de stad (heen)
tranten lopen over zijn wangen
er waren over de 100 mensen
overdag
hij is over de 60
het is al over achten
vrijdag over een week
over 50 jaar
over het algemeen (also in)
een boek/film over iets
dit boek gaat over de oorlog
je moet er niet over praten
de film is over
ik heb wat over

per – by, per
per post/train/tram etc. (see met)
5 keer per seconde/uur/jaar
ze worden per dozijn verkocht

qua – as, as far as ... is concerned
hoe vind je dit boek qua presentatie
qua aantal deelnemers was het een succes

at a sign from me
on the radio/T.V.
on one condition
as a child I used to wear clogs
she cooks with gas
by bike
at a height of 2000 metres
one in every fifty (people etc.)
one phone to every 50 inhabitants
my car does 10 to the litre
at the age of twenty
on the 23rd
my money has all gone
there is no money in the account

the plane is flying above the city (over)
tears ran down his cheeks
there were over 100 people
during the day
he's over 60
it's already past eight o'clock
a week from Friday
in fifty years' time
in general, generally
a book/film about something
this book is about the war
you mustn't talk about it
the film is over
I have something left

by mail/train/tram etc.
five times a second/hour/year
they are sold by the dozen

what do you think of this book as far as its presentation is concerned
as far as numbers go, it was a success
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>rond, rondom — <strong>around</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rond het vuur</td>
<td>around the fire</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hij liep rond het huis (tegenover)</td>
<td>he ran around the house</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rondom de stad loopt een singel</td>
<td>a moat runs around the city</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| **sedert** — **since, for** (see **sinds**)
| sedert 12 mei | since the twelfth of May |
| sedert enige tijd | for some time |
| **sinds** — **since, for** (see **sedert**)
| sinds de oorlog | since the war |
| sinds lange tijd | for a long time |
| te — **at, in** (also **ter, ten** in set expressions, see p. 218) |
| For use with **om** before infinitives see p. 157. |
| te Amsterdam (lit.) | in Amsterdam |
| te paard | by horse, on horseback |
| te koop | for sale |
| je hebt f 10 te goed | you have f 10 to your credit |
| en terecht | and rightly so |
| een schip te water laten | to launch a ship |
| te voorschijn komen | to appear |
| te binnen schieten | to occur (to s.o.) |
| **tegen** — **against**
| Ajax speelt tegen Feijenoord | A. is playing against F. (sport) |
| tegen de muur | against the wall |
| met mijn rug tegen de muur | with my back to the wall |
| tegen 8%rente | at 8% interest |
| tegen de prijs | at that price |
| het is duizend tegéén | a thousand to one (odds) |
| tegen acilteur | at about eight o’clock |
| hij is tegen de 50 | he is about 50 |
| ik kan er niet tegen | I can’t stand it; it upsets me |
| ik heb er niets tegen | I don’t object (to it) |
| **tegenover** — **opposite**
| hij woont tegenover een bank | he lives opposite a bank |
| recht/schuin tegenover | directly/diagonally opposite |

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>er zijn 900 overleden in 1977 tegenover 1200 in 1978</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hij is verlegen tegenover dames</td>
<td>dat kun je niet doen tegenover je ouders</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| **tijdens** — **during** (see **gedurende**)
| tijdens de oorlog | since the war |
| tijdens lange tijd | for a long time |
| **tot** — **until** (see p. 189)
| wij gaan tot Amsterdam | we are going as far as Amsterdam |
| tot nu toe, tot dusver | up till now |
| tot drie keer toe | up to three times |
| tot diep in de nacht | until late at night |
| ze werden tot de laatste man gedood | they were all killed to the last man |
| tot ziens | good-bye (till we see each other again) |
| tot en met | up to and including |
| tot elke prijs | at any price |
| tot mijn verbazing/vreugde | to my amazement/joy |
| iemand overhalen tot stelen/meegaan | to talk s.o. into stealing-going along |
| tussen — **between**
| tussen de twee bomen | between the two trees |
| tussen 3 en 4 uur | between 3 and 4 o’clock |
| dat blijft tussen ons | that must stay between you and me |
| je moet klezen tussen... | you must choose between... |
| **uit** — **out, out of, from**
| uit een glas drinken | to drink from a glass |
| hij komt uit Edam/ Belgie | he comes from Edam/ Belgium |
| hij is uit het dorp verdwenen | he disappeared from the village |
| uit de 15e eeuw | from the fifteenth century |
| ik deed het uit liefdadigheid | I did it for the sake of charity |
| uit wraak/jaloerie/vrees | out of revenge/jealousy/fear |
| uit eigen ervaring | from one’s own experience |
| uit het Nederlands vertalen | to translate from Dutch |
| we gaan een dagje uit | we are going out for a day |
| de verloving is uit | the engagement is over |
| de kachel/het licht is uit | the heater/light is off |
| heb je het boek al uit | have you finished the book |
| 900 died in 1977 as against/opposed to 1200 in 1978 |
| he is shy with ladies | you can’t do that to your parents |
van — or, from, off

Usually written with a small letter in people’s names, eg. H. van den Berg. (see p. 16)

**hij is net van A’dam gekomen**
he has just come from A’dam

deg *auto van mijn oom*
my uncle’s car

een tante van mij
an aunt of mine

een vriend van mijn moeder
a friend of my mother’s

**van het dak vallen**
to fall off the roof

**van 1970 tot 1975**
from 1970 to 1975

degen van de tien mensen
nine out of every ten people

**van plan zijn**
to intend

dit is van hout
this is made of wood

**van brood leven**
to live on bread

**Nederland van geboorte**
a Dutchman by birth

**iemand van naam kennen**
to know somebody by name

**ik rammel van de honger**
I’m dying of hunger

**een schat van een mald**
a really nice girl

**een kast van een huis**
an enormous house

**van ja/nee zeggen**
to say yes/no

**ik meen/denk/van wel/ niet**
I think so/not

Note: the preposition van is often used colloquially before direct objects where it assumes a sort of partitive function:

*Ik hoef niet meer van die lange omwegen te maken.*
*Ik heb van alles gezien.*

**voor — for**

**iets voor jou**
something for you

**voor de eerste keer**
for the first time

**voor alle zekerheid**
for safety’s sake

**hij is voor zijn leven geborgen**
his’s fixed for life

**woord voor woord**
word for word

**stuk voor stuk**
piece by piece

**één voor één**
one by one

**ik heb het voor het avondeten gemaakt**
I made it for dinner

**vóór — before, in front of**

**vóór het huis**
in front of the house

**Ik heb veel werk vóór me**
I have a lot of work ahead of me

**het schip lag vóór Tokio**
the ship lay off Tokyo

**vóór tien jaar**
ten years ago

**ik heb het vóór het avondeten gemaakt**
I made it before dinner

**voorbij — past, beyond**

**hij woonde voorbij de kerk**
he lives past the church

**wegens — because of, on account of** (see *vanwege*)

**zonder — without**

**een boek zonder kaft**
a book without a cover

**hij was zonder hoed**
he didn’t have a hat on

**zonder u was het niet gelukt**
but for you it wouldn’t have succeeded

**ik kan er niet zonder**
I can’t do without it

13.1 Prepositional phrases

The following phrases made up of usually two prepositions and a noun are in common use, although many will be found only in the written language. Those incorporating the preposition te usually have an enclitic form of *te + den = ten* or *te + der = ter*, these being the former definite articles in the dative case for masculine/neuter nouns and feminine nouns respectively. Sometimes the noun also takes a dative -e. Many of these expressions are commonly abbreviated, eg. *i.p.v. — in plaats van.*

**aan de hand van**
on the basis of, judging from

**aan de voet van**
at the foot of

**aan deze/die kant van**
on this/that side of
A number of common prepositions can follow the nouns to which they refer in which case the direction of the action is emphasised rather than the place of the action. When followed immediately by the verb in subordinate clauses, they can be confused with separable prefixes (see p. 181).

- zij gaat de stad in
- hij liep de kamer uit
- hij liep de kamer in/binnen
- Roodkapje liep het bos helemaal door
- de auto reed de hoek om
- gaat u de eerste brug rechts over
- we reden toen de hoofdweg op
- we fietsen het kanaal langs
- de jongens roeiden de rivier af
- hij gaat de berg op/af
- je moet die kant op/uit

For prepositions following *ergens, nergens and overal* see p. 71.

### 13.2 USE OF *HEEN* WITH PREPOSITIONS

Several prepositions are used together with *heen* (which follows the noun) to indicate direction. The meaning of a preposition + noun + *heen* is similar to that explained in 13.2.1 above; it can, however, have a figurative meaning, as some of the following examples illustrate.

- hij rende huilend door de menigte heen
- langs elkaar heen praten
- we gaan morgen naar A'dam toe/heen
- de kinderen renden om rond het park heen
- hij keek om zich heen
- het vliegtuig vloog over de stad heen
- ik heb er overheen gelezen
- he ran through the crowd crying to talk at cross purposes
- we are going to A'dam tomorrow
- the kids ran around the park
- he looked around (himself)
- the plane flew over the city
- it escaped me while reading
13.2.3 DOUBLE PREPOSITIONS

Many of the prepositions given above can be used together to further emphasise the position or direction of the action.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{achter in de tuin} & \quad \text{he is due for a promotion} \\
\text{achter in de twintig} & \quad \text{the water was up to his knees} \\
\text{achter in de garage} & \quad \text{down the back of the garden} \\
\text{achter in de schuur} & \quad \text{he is in his late twenties} \\
\text{achter in de shed} & \quad \text{he reversed out of the garage} \\
\text{achter in de blad} & \quad \text{inside the shed} \\
\text{achter in de kast} & \quad \text{(up) on top of the cupboard} \\
\text{achter in het bos} & \quad \text{it happened without my knowledge} \\
\text{achter in het middle} & \quad \text{in the middle of the forest} \\
\text{achter in de brug door} & \quad \text{you go through under the bridge} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{he came up to me} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{the third largest city} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{except for Dolf} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{he is out for a profit} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{he drove into a tree} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{he drove into a wall} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{he was driving against the wind} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{that was against all expectations} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{they accompanied him up to the border} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{up till now} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{well, till three weeks from now} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{there are trees in between the houses} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{from next week} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{I could see it from the window} \\
\text{achter in de wind in} & \quad \text{he has just come from Edam} \\
\end{align*}
\]

Note: Use of \textit{vandaan} with verbs of motion is similar to that of \textit{naar toe} (see above).

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{voor in de auto} & \quad \text{in the front of the car} \\
\text{voor in de auto} & \quad \text{he was looking in front of him} \\
\text{voor in de auto} & \quad \text{I have s.t. to have with (the) dessert} \\
\text{voor in de auto} & \quad \text{it is used after shaving} \\
\end{align*}
\]

Note: Sentences such as \textit{achter in de tuin} seem to be utilising double prepositions as given here but are in fact separable verbs followed by a preposition, i.e. \textit{afvalen}

Many of the above prepositional pairs can be written together and act as independent adverbs (see p. 107).

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{achterin} & \quad \text{in the back} \\
\text{achterom} & \quad \text{around the back} \\
\text{achteruit} & \quad \text{backwards} \\
\text{binnenin} & \quad \text{inside} \\
\text{bovenop} & \quad \text{on top} \\
\text{middenin} & \quad \text{in the middle} \\
\text{onderaan} & \quad \text{down the middle (of a page)} \\
\text{onderin} & \quad \text{at the bottom} \\
\text{tussenin} & \quad \text{in between} \\
\text{voorin} & \quad \text{in the front} \\
\end{align*}
\]

13.2.4 OMISSION OF ENGLISH 'OF'

It should be noted that the preposition 'of' is often left untranslated in Dutch:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{een fles bier} & \quad \text{a bottle of beer} \\
\text{een doosje lucifers} & \quad \text{a box of matches} \\
\text{een krat appels} & \quad \text{a crate of apples} \\
\text{duizenden mensen} & \quad \text{thousands of people} \\
\text{de provincie Utrecht} & \quad \text{the province of Utrecht} \\
\text{een soort (van) vaas} & \quad \text{a sort of vase} \\
\end{align*}
\]
14 Numerals (telwoorden)

14.1 Cardinal numbers (hoofdtelwoorden)

(on)even nummers — (un)even numbers (of houses or in a game)
(on)even getallen — (un)even numbers e.g. 3 is een oneven getal

0 nul
1 een
2 twee
3 drie
4 vier
5 vijf
6 zes
7 zeven
8 acht
9 negen
10 tien
11 elf
12 twaalf
13 dertien
14 veertienvijftig
15 vijftien
16 zestien
17 zeventien
18 achttien
19 negentien
20 twintig
21 eenentwintig
22 tweehonderd
23 driehonderd
24 vierentwintig

Notes

1 The numeral een is written één in contexts where it could be read as the indefinite article or simply to emphasize it means one e.g. Ik heb maar één broertje en dat is meer dan genoeg. One must not conclude that whenever een means one it must bear acute accents — only when confusion could arise or emphasis is required, i.e. een van de kopjes heeft geen oor — here the word can only be read as one and the indefinite article would not make sense.

2 When pronouncing numbers deliberately as in giving telephone numbers all derivatives of the word zeven are commonly pronounced zeven, zeventien etc. to avoid confusion with negen.

3 Note that veertien and veertig deviate in spelling and pronunciation from the basic cardinal vier.

4 In numerals combining twee and drie plus en a diaeresis is required on the en to distinguish a separate syllable.

5 The initial letters of the numerals 40, 50, 60 and 70 are unvoiced for historical reasons, i.e. one says veertig, vijftig, zestig, zeventig.

6 Note the initial t in tachtig. It has historical connections with point 5.

7 One will often find mistakes in Dutch texts with regard to the division of numerals over 100. The rule is that a space is left after the hundreds and/or thousands, but not between the multiples and the hundreds and/or thousands. To write them together as in German is considered unwieldy.

8 Note that no 'and' is inserted between honderd/duizend and the following figure. One does in fact hear driehonderd en tien but this is in more deliberate speech and is only used and found before low numerals and is never necessary. En is always used however, in standing expressions such as Verhalen van duizend-en-een nacht and ze praatten over duizend en één dingen. Een is sometimes heard before honderd and duizend but is not common.

9 In the Netherlands, as in so many European countries, a seven is often written differently: 7 — seven.

Note: In Holland it is usual to count in hundreds up to 10,000 and only above that figure to count in thousands. i.e. 6,300 is read driehonderd en één duizend. Even thousands are, however, said in thousands, i.e. 2000 is tweeduizend and not twintigduizend.

The Dutch use a full-stop when writing thousands, not a comma: eg. 10,000.
14.1.1 DERIVATIVES OF CARDINALS

Honderd, duizend and miljoen take an -en ending when one means hundreds of etc., eg. duizenden mensen gingen naar de kermis.

Met ons/z'n tweeën, drieën, vieren, vijven, zessen etc. Such expressions are very common and mean two of us/them etc. Note that expressions with ons must have a wij as subject of the sentence whereas those with hun/z'n (never zijn) can have wij or zij as subject.

We gingen met ons/z'n vieren naar de bioscoop.

Zij hebben het met z'n tienien gedaan.

Theoretically any numeral can bear this ending, eg. met z'n vijvenvijftigen but it is only common among lower figures. It is in fact the only way the Dutchman has of expressing 'there were five of us'.

A more intimate and colloquial form of the above is met z'n tweetjes, drietjes etc. Also in z'n eentje = on his own. The -en ending is also found in expressions such as een van ons tweeën; also in time (see Time below).

Another interesting derivative is tweeling, drieling, vierling etc. for twins, triplets, quadruplets etc. These words take a singular verb, eg. Vandaag is er in Leiden een zesling geboren.

een veertigtal etc. = about 40 altogether.

Ik heb een vijftigtal studenten in de klas.

Note also tientallen + plural noun = tens of,

tientallen mensen = tens of people.

Enerei, tweeëriei, drieëriei etc. mean 'of one/two/three kind(s)'. Also allerlei — all kinds of. Those formed from numerals are a little stilted, however.

Het dubbele, driedubbele, vierdubbele etc. render 'twice/three/four times as much'.

Ik heb het vijfdubbele betaald. I paid five times as much.

Notes on cardinals

1 een goede veertig a good forty, at least forty
een dikke honderd a good hundred
een kleine zestig no more than sixty
onder/over (boven) de zestig under/over sixty

in de vijftig about fifty
'n twintig jaar geleden about twenty years ago
een jaar of twintig jaar
about twenty years ago

The last expression is very common in all sorts of contexts: een man of tien, een stuk of zes, een boek of twaalf.

2 Telephone numbers:

When reading a telephone number aloud it is usual to divide the figure into couplets and read tweeëndertig veertig eenenzestig — 324061. It is, however, permissible to read the numbers out individually. Dutch phone numbers look as follows:

030-761253: the first number is the kengetal or netnummer of the town concerned and the second is the abonnementummer.

3 One in every ten etc. is said een op de tien (mensen). Nine out of every ten etc. is, however, negen van de tien (mensen).

4 The English word 'number' can be rendered in several ways in Dutch:

het telwoord number in the sense of numeral i.e. as in telefoonnummer, or
hij woont op nummer 5

het cijfer a figure, cipher (also a mark at school)

het getal arithmetic number, getallen optellen — to add up numbers

het aantal quantity, i.e. een aantal boeken — a number of books

het tal most common in the expression tal van eg. tal van mensen zijn gekomen = many people came, a number of

14.2 Ordinal numbers (rangtelwoorden)

1st eerste
2nd tweede
3rd derde
4th vierde
5th vijfde
6th zesde
7th zevende
8th achtste
9th negende
10th tiende
11th elfde
12th twaalfde
13th dertiende
14th veertiende
22nd tweëntwintigste
23rd drieëntwintigste
24th vierentwintigste
25th vijfentwintigste
26th zesentwintigste
27th zeventwintigste
28th achtentwintigste
29th negentwintigste
30th derdzigste
40th veertigste
50th vijftigste
60th zestigste
70th zeventigste
80th tachtigste
15th vijftiende
16th zestiende
17th zeventiende
18th achttiende
19th negentiende
20th twintigste
21st eenentwintigste
90th negentiende
100th honderdste
101st honderdeerste
3 121st honderdeenentwintigste
3 8452nd achtduizendvierhonderdtweeënvijftigste
3 1,000,000th miljoenste

All ordinals after 20th end in -ste in Dutch. Ordinals can be used as nouns or as adjectives and always preserve the final -e, e.g. een tweede huis (compare een rood huis).

Notes

1 Tweede actually contradicts the spelling rules of Dutch; in such an open syllable one would expect tweede.*

2 In these ordinals the f or s preceding the -de ending is voiced under influence of the following voiced sound, i.e. pronounced zezde, elvde etc.

3 Note the omission of 'and', i.e. hundred and twentyfirst.

Notes on ordinals

1 In certain standard expressions ordinals are found with the older case ending -en, e.g. ten eersten male, ten tweeden male.

2 The ordinals are often used as follows when listing points, i.e. firstly, secondly, thirdly, finally – ten eerste, ten tweede, ten derde, ten laatste.

3 Expressions such as every tenth tree can be translated literally as elke/eiende tiende boom, but are also commonly rendered as om de tien bomen, om de drie weken.

4 Hoeveel and zoveel can also take the ordinal ending -ste.

   De hoeveelste bezoeker? (see p. 230)
   Hij heeft me voor de zoveelste keer opgebeld – the umpteenth time.

5 Foreign kings are always denoted by the ordinal as in English.

   Karel de Vijfde, Elisabeth de Tweede (note capital letter)

The Dutch kings, however, are usually referred to with the cardinal, i.e. Koning Willem II (pronounced twee).

6 The various English abbreviations st, nd, th etc. are all rendered in Dutch by e, e.g. 1e, 122e etc. One does occasionally find for 1st and 2nd, 1ste and 2de.

7 The Dutch have an unusual way of expressing 'the second largest', 'the fourth most important' etc.: Het op één na grootste schip – the second largest boat. Op drie na de belangrijkste operazanger – the fourth most important opera singer.

8 andermaal = second time; it is commonly used at auctions for 'going once, going twice' = eenmaal, andermaal.

14.3 Fractions (breukgetallen)

1/4 een kwart
1/2 een half
3/4 driekwart
1 1/2 anderhalf
2 1/2 twee-en-een-half
1/8 een achtste (deel)
2/3 twee derde (van de mensen etc.)
3/8 drie achtste
1/16 een zestiende (deel)
0.5% nul komma vijf procent = point five per cent
1.8% één komma acht procent = one point eight per cent

Notes

1 een kwartier
   een kwartaal
   een kwartje

   1/4 of an hour (see Time)
   1/4 of a year, period of three months
   25 cents Dutch currency

2 The English word half causes difficulties because the noun and the adjective in Dutch are different words unlike English, i.e. de helft, half.

   The way the two are used is best illustrated by examples:

   de helft van de mensen – half the people
   (only possibility for people)

   de helft van de fles – half the bottle

   de halve fles
   Hij heeft de helft van de appel opgegeten.
   Hij heeft de halve appel opgegeten.
   Hij heeft de appel half opgegeten.
   Hij heeft de appel voor de helft opgegeten.
   Ik heb de helft van het boek al uit. / Ik heb het halve boek al uit.
   Voor de halve prijs / Voor de helft van de prijs.

1 One can also say percent and the noun is percentage (n).
One and a half retains an archaic form *anderhalf* which behaves like a normal adjective taking -e in cases where the adjective is normally inflected,

*anderhalf uur, anderhalf meter.*

Notice that *anderhalf, twee-en-een-half-ve* etc. are always followed by a singular noun:

*drie-en-een-halfe* week.

In such expressions the *een* is usually swallowed and hardly heard.

3 one tenth of a pound = *een tiende pond*

Note the use of the singular in *twee derde van de bevolking is in de oorlog gestorven;* a plural of such fractions is possible if one refers to the parts as separate parts, eg. *twee derden van de taart moeten opgegeten worden.*

14.4 Arithmetic/calculation (*rekenen*)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Operation</th>
<th>Dutch noun</th>
<th>English equivalent</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>to add</td>
<td><em>optellen</em></td>
<td>4 plus (en) 4 is 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>to subtract</td>
<td><em>aftrekken van</em></td>
<td>4 min 2 is 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>to multiply</td>
<td><em>vermenigvuldigen met</em></td>
<td>2 keer (maal) 3 is 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>to divide</td>
<td><em>delen door</em></td>
<td>10 gedeeld door 2 is 5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

14.5 Temperature

1° = *één graad*

10° C/F = *tien graden Celsius/Fahrenheit*

12° beneden/onder nul

*Het heeft vannacht 12° (twaalf graden) gevrogen* — it was 12° below last night.

or We hebben vannacht 12° vorst gehad.

*De maximum-, minimumtemperatuur, de gemiddelde temperatuur.*

14.6 Age

*Hoe oud ben je (bent u)?*

Ik ben maar/pas tien (jaar oud).

Wanneer ben je (bent u) geboren?

Ik ben (op) tien maart geboren.

Ik ben twaalf/augustus jarig.

*Op 14-jarige leeftijd.*

Op mijn (zijn etc.) veertiende jaar.

*Tussen mijn twaalfde en mijn eentwintigste.*

*Tussen (de) 18 en (de) 20.*

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch question</th>
<th>English equivalent</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hoe oud ben je (bent u)?</td>
<td>How old are you?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ik ben maar/pas tien (jaar oud).</td>
<td>I am only ten (years old).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wanneer ben je (bent u) geboren?</td>
<td>When were you born?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ik ben (op) tien maart geboren.</td>
<td>I was born on the tenth of March.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ik ben twaalf/augustus jarig.</td>
<td>My birthday is on August 12th.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Op 14-jarige leeftijd.</em></td>
<td>At the age of 14.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Op mijn (zijn etc.) veertiende jaar.</td>
<td>At the age of 14.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tussen mijn twaalfde en mijn eentwintigste.</td>
<td>From the age of 12 to 21.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tussen (de) 18 en (de) 20.</td>
<td>Between 18 and 20.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

14.7 Money

*eens, twee cents etc.*

*eens stuiver (c) — vijf cent*

eens stukje (n) — tienv cent

eens kwartje (n) — vijftwintig cent

eens gulden (c), twee gulden etc.

eens rijksdaalder (c) — twee gulden vijftig

eens tientje (n) — vijf gulden

Notes on money

1 *cents/gulden* are always used in the singular when quoting prices. The plurals *centen/gulden* are used to refer to several one cent or one guilder coins.

*Geef me twee gulden en twee kaartjes voor deze rijksdaalder.*

The same applies to foreign currencies: *tien, vijf frank etc.*

2 The abbreviation for guilder is *f*, eg. *f 10.* In banks one sometimes sees *Hfl.* = *Hollandse florijnen,* an old word for guilder.

3 Prices are written with commas, not decimal points: *f 12,50* — pronounced *twaalf (gulden) vijftig (cent)* — the word cent is not necessary and not common, however.

*Note:* 5 gulders odd = 5 gulden zoveel.

4 Colloquially the word *piek* is used for guilder, eg. *Het kostte 10 piek.* In a similar way the word *ton* is used for 100,000 guilders, eg. *een halve ton, vijf ton etc.* Also the word *mille* for thousands eg. *dat kostte twee mille.*
Expressions such as 'he earns £250 a month, a week etc.' are *hij verdient £250 in de maand (per maand), in de week (per week) etc.*

### 14.8 Time

**Hoe laat is het?**

- *Het is één uur.*
- *Het is vijf over een.*
- *Het is kwart over één.*
- *Het is tien voor half twee.*
- *Het is half twee.*
- *Het is vijf over half twee.*
- *Het is tien over half twee.*
- *Het is kwart over twee.*
- *Het is half twee.*

**I**

- *Om acht uur.*
- *Te acht uur (lit.).*
- *Om een uur of acht.*
- *Om het hele (half) uur.*
- *Om een kwartier voor acht.*
- *Om een kwartier over acht.*
- *Om een kwartier voor een uur.*
- *Om een kwartier over een uur.*

---

My watch is fast/slow/right. — *Mijn horloge loopt voor/achter/goed.*

My watch says four o'clock. — *Ik heb het vier uur.*

Note that *uur, kwartier, jaar, keer* (all neuter nouns) are never used in the plural after numerals.

*Ik heb drie uur zitten lezen.*

After indefinite numerals like *enkele* and *enige* they do appear in the plural, however,

*Ze hebben enkele uren rondgewandeld.*

**Minuut and seconde** (common gender nouns) always occur in the plural after numerals,

*vijf minuten geleden; drie seconden later.*

---

Once an hour

- *Een keer in het uur, per uur; om het uur.*
- *Drie keer in de week, per week.*
- *Op het hele (half) uur.*
- *Tien over het heel (half).*

### 14.9 Dates

- *Zondag*
- *Maandag*
- *Dinsdag*
- *Woensdag*
- *Donderdag*
- *Vrijdag*
- *Januari (jan.)*
- *Februari (feb.)*
- *Maart (mrt.)*
- *April (apr.)*
- *Maart (mrt.)*
- *Mei*
- *Juni*
- *Juli*
- *Juli*
- *Augustus (aug.)*
- *September (sept.)*
- *Oktober (okt.)*
- *November (nov.)*
- *December (dec.)*

**Days of the week and months of the year are nowadays written with small letters but are still sometimes found in texts with capital letters.**

- *Begin april* at the beginning of April
- *Half/midden/medio maart* halfway through March, mid-March
- *Eind mei* at the end of May

---

2 There is also a number of expressions which add an *-en* ending to the numeral. They are frequently heard but can be avoided by using the alternatives already mentioned.

*Het is al na/voor drieeen, vijven etc.* — *It is already past three, five etc.*

*Het was intussen bij zessen.* — *It was six o'clock by then.*

---

Remember that *kwartier* in itself means a quarter of an hour.

- *Ik heb een kwartier gewacht.*
- *Drie kwartier.*
- *Vijf kwartier.*
  
*Also: een uur en een kwartier.*

2 It is also possible to say *twees over een* and *twees voor twee,* but the practice is not common; *half twee etc.* is often also written as *half twee*.

---

4 a.m./p.m. are rendered by *v.m./n.m.,* abbreviations of *(des) voor-, namiddags.* They are too formal for the spoken language, however; in conversation one would say *om zes uur 's morgens* (*'s ochtends*'s avonds, om een uur 's nachts in de nacht).*

---

4 The stress is on the penultimate syllable: *augustus.*
It is important to note the following usage of cardinals and ordinals with regard to dates in Dutch:

Note: De hoeveelste is het vandaag? — What is the date today?

Het is drie mei. — It is the third of May.
but
Het is de derde. — It is the third.

When the month is mentioned the cardinal is usually used, when not, then the ordinal. It is, however, not incorrect to say de derde mei.

On Friday the twenty-second of April. — (Op) vrijdag tweeëntwintig april.
The abbreviation at the top of a letter, for instance, is thus vrijdag, 22 sept. 1977 — no e or . after 22.
The complete abbreviation is written 22-9-77.
22-10-77 is a datum (c)-date.
1977 is a jaartal (n)-date.
When reading jaartallen aloud it is not usual to insert the word honderd: negentien (honderd) zevenzeventig.

In de zestiger jaren, in de jaren zestig. — In the sixties.
In vijf jaar tijd. — In five years’ time.
Over vijf jaar. — In five years’ time.
Om de eeuwwisseling. — At the turn of the century.

14.1 Weights

het gram
het ons
het pond (i.e. een halve kilo; an English pound is 454 grams)
het kilo (but usually regarded as being of common gender, eg. een halve kilo)

These weights are always used in the singular after numerals (as are kwartier, uur, jaar and keer), eg. vijf pond, twee ons (200 grams).

Fractions of these weights are expressed as follows:
één tiende gram (one tenth of a gram)
anderhalf ons
twee-en-een-half ons, 250 gram, een half pond, een kwartkilo; een halve kilo, een pond, 500 gram
driekwartkilo, anderhalf pond, 750 gram
You will find the various expressions incorporating pond are the most common on the whole although prices of meat, cheese etc. are often given per ons.

Note also een klein pondje — a bit less than a pound.
One says f 1.50 per pond, per kilo etc. or het pond, het kilo. People always refer to their weight in kilos, eg. Ik weeg 70 kilo. Aankomen — to gain weight, afvallen — to lose weight; both are conjugated with zijn. (see p. 142)

Ik ben dit jaar 10 kilo aangekomen/afgevallen.
Bijkomen can be used instead of aankomen.

14.11 Measurements

1 Length, height

De lengte — length of objects or height of people. The height of a tree etc. is de hoogte.
Hoe lang bent u? — How tall are you?
Ik ben 1,72 lang. — pronounced een meter tweezeventig.
If quoting one’s height in English measurements the words voet (feet) and duim (inches) are used.

Length up to one metre is said in centimetres (never decimetres).

Note: de centimeter — the tape measure.

de breedte width
de grootte size (i.e. largeness)
de maat (shoe, shirt) size

2 Square and cubic measurements

vijf bij vijf (meter) five by five (metres)
drie vierkante meter three square metres
zes kubieke meter six cubic metres

3 Distance

Distances are, of course, measured in kilometres in Holland and the word kilometer, like centimeter and meter, is never used in the plural after numerals.

We hebben vandaag 20 kilometer gereden.

Note: honderden/duizenden kilometers.

The English measure mile is mijl (c) and can be used (in the singular also) when talking of distances in Anglo-Saxon countries.
Petrol consumption of a car is rendered as follows:
*Mijn auto rijdt één op vijftien* (i.e. één liter op vijftien kilometer) – fifteen kilometres to the litre.

Speed is expressed as follows: *hij reed tachtig kilometer per uur* – he was driving (at) 80 kilometres an hour. Compare: *hij reed met tachtig kilometer per uur de rivier in* – he drove into the river at eighty kilometres an hour.

### 14.12 Playing cards

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>schoppen</td>
<td>spades</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ruiten</td>
<td>diamonds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>klaveren</td>
<td>clubs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>harten</td>
<td>hearts</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*de schoppen*, *-heer, -vrouw, -boer, -negen* – ace, king, queen, jack and nine of spades.

One can also say *twee harten, drie ruiten etc.*

*de troef/kaart* – trump card

---

### 15 Er

*Er* has four functions in Dutch: replective, partitive, pronominal and locative. The four are dealt with separately below. It is possible to have various combinations of these in one clause; the complications arising from such combinations are dealt with in the notes following the description of the four functions.

#### 15.1 Replective er

Indefinite subjects are very commonly placed after the verb in Dutch with *er* introducing the verb in much the same way as ‘there’ can be used in English.

*Er loopt een man op de straat.*

There is a man walking in the street.

*Er moeten nog veel meer mensen komen.*

A lot more people should be coming.

*Er bracht een juffrouw koffie rond.*

A girl brought coffee around.

*Toen kwam er een pastoor.*

Then a priest arrived.

*Wat is er gebeurd?*  
What happened?

*Wie is er vandaag jarig?*  
Who has a birthday today?

On occasions, as in the last two examples, it can be omitted but the *er* generally prefers it.

To this category belong also *er is/zijn* – ‘there is/are’.

It should be noted that *liggen, staan* and *zitten* (less commonly *hangen* and *lopen*) often replace ‘to be’ in Dutch and they then usually occur in *er* constructions.

*Er zit een muis in de hoek.*

There is a mouse in the corner.

*Er staat een foto van haar in de krant.*

There is a photo of her in the paper.

*Er lagen vier boeken op tafel.*

Four books were lying on the table.

*Loopt er een gracht achter jullie huis?*  
Is there a canal behind your house?
15.2 Partitive er

This *er* is used with numerals and adverbs of quantity, often corresponding to French 'en'. In English it means something like 'of them/it', but is usually not translated.

Hoeveel heb je? Ik heb *er* drie.
How many do you have? I have three of them.
Hij heeft *er* genoeg.
He has enough of them.
Het aantal is toegenomen. Vijftien jaar geleden waren *het* er honderd.
The number has increased. Fifteen years ago there were one hundred of them.
Hoeveel bomen staan *er* (repleetive) in die straat? *Er* (repleetive) staan *er* (partitive) honderd.
How many trees are there in that street? There are one hundred of them.

15.3 Pronominal er

This is the *er* which replaces the pronouns 'it' and 'them' (referring to things only) after prepositions, i.e. *op het, van het etc.* is an impossible combination in Dutch; this must be *erop, ervan etc.* Op *ze, van ze etc.* can only refer to people, never things — this would also be *erop, ervan etc.* (see p. 56)

De meeste ervan zijn te duur.
Most of them are too dear.
Ik heb het brood er mee gesneden, ik heb *er* het brood mee gesneden.
I cut the bread with it (with them).
Ik kijk *er* vaak naar.
I often look at it.

It is more usual to place *er* immediately after the finite verb and the preposition at the end of the sentence, but before past participles and infinitives. These constructions must not be confused with *waar... op etc.* (see p. 63).

Note the following complicated usage of pronominal *er*: it is employed with verbs that are always followed by a set preposition i.e.: *overtuigen van* — to convince of, *denken aan* — to think of etc.

Ik ben ervan overtuigd dat...
I am convinced that...
Ik had er nooit aan gedacht het zo te doen.
I would never have thought of doing it like that.
Hij verdenkt *er* zijn vriend van een overval op een bank te hebben gepleegd.
He suspects his friend of having raided a bank.
De administratie heeft erop gestaan dat...
The administration insisted that...
Ben je er zeker van dat we op de goede weg zitten.
Are you sure that we are on the right road.

15.4 Locative er

This *er* replaces *daar* in unstressed positions.

Ik ben er nooit geweest.

Compare: Daar ben ik nooit geweest.

Zij heeft er tien jaar gewoond.
Je bent nog te jong om er in je eentje naartoe te gaan.
You are still too young to go there on your own.

Locative *er* is usually used with the verb *aankomen* (to arrive) when the place is not otherwise mentioned.

Hoe laat ben je er aangekomen?
What time did you arrive?

Notes on *er*

A repleetive *er* and a pronominal *er* do not occur in the same clause — the pronominal *er* is usually deleted.

Er keken veel mensen naar het programma.
Er keken veel mensen naar.

A repleetive *er* together with emphatic pronominal form *daar* is possible, however:

Daar keken (er) veel mensen naar.
Er werd niet veel over gesproken.
Dat artikel staat in *De Telegraaf*.
Dat artikel staat erin.
Er staat ook weinig sportnieuws in *De Telegraaf*.
Er staat ook weinig sportnieuws in.
Er lag een laagje zand op.

or the emphatic forms:

Daar moet geld blij.
Hier staat geen prijs op.

2 More than two *er’s* in one clause is impossible. In a clause where the sense demands three, you either delete the third or rephrase:

Deletion: Er keken drie mensen naar het programma.
Er keken er drie naar het programma.
Er keken er drie naar.

Rephrasing: Er keken drie mensen naar het programma.
Er waren er drie die naar het programma keken.
Er waren er drie die ernaar keken.
3 The verb uitzien always requires er and should be learnt as er uitzien. This is an unusual idiomatic usage of the particle.

Hij ziet er ziek uit.

er uitzien translates ‘to look’ in the sense of ‘to appear’ or ‘to look as if’:

Hij ziet eruit alsof hij ziek gaat worden.

In such a construction er and uit are usually joined.

Note: Het ziet er naar uit alsof het gaat regenen.

naar is used with this verb in impersonal constructions with het.

4 It is common when using a split pronominal er construction in a sentence in the perfect tense for the writer to join the preposition (which is actually dependent on the er) to the following past participle, treating the two as a separable verb,

\[
\text{ik heb er mijn sokken in gedaan}
\]

\[
\text{ik heb er mijn sokken ingedaan}
\]

(see also p. 181).

16 Negation (ontkenning)

16.1 Position of niet/nooit

The negative follows:

1 Adjuncts of time

\[
\text{Ik kom morgen niet.}
\]

but for emphasis it could on occasions precede morgen.

\[
\text{We willen het dit jaar niet doen.}
\]

but for emphasis:

\[
\text{We willen het niet dit jaar doen (maar volgend jaar).}
\]

Note: Niet always precedes altijd:

\[
\text{Zijn verhalen worden niet altijd geloofd.}
\]

2 The object (definite)

The negative follows the direct object as long as it is definite, i.e. preceded by de/het, deze/dit/die/dat, possessives or a pronoun.

\[
\text{Hij heeft het boek nooit gelezen.}
\]

Compare: \[
\text{Hij heeft nooit een boek gelezen. (indefinite)}
\]

\[
\text{Ik kan de sleutel niet vinden.}
\]

Compare: \[
\text{Ik heb nooit een sleutel kunnen vinden. (indefinite)}
\]

\[
\text{Hij leest het boek niet. Leest hij het boek niet?}
\]

\[
\text{Jij kent hem niet. Ken je hem niet?}
\]

It does, of course, precede infinitives, past participles and separable prepositions in such sentences:

\[
\text{Ik heb het hem niet gegeven.}
\]

But

\[
\text{Ik heb het niet aan hem gegeven. (see prepositional objects)}
\]

\[
\text{Heeft zij het boek nooit gelezen?}
\]

\[
\text{Ik heb er mijn sokken niet in gedaan.}
\]
The negative either precedes or follows:

Complements of the verb zijn

*Dat is niet de bedoeling.*
*Dat is de bedoeling niet.*
*Hij is niet mijn vader.*
*Hij is mijn vader niet.*

The negative precedes:

1. The object (indefinite)
   The negative precedes the direct object as long as it is indefinite, i.e. a noun preceded by een, zo'n, veel or indefinite pronouns like iets, iemand etc.
   *Hij heeft nooit een auto gehad.*
   *We zullen niet veel (dingen) kunnen kopen.*
   *Heb je er nooit iets over gehoord?*

   For *niet een* see Notes on negatives.

2. Adjuncts of manner
   *Ik ga niet met de auto.*
   *Ik reis niet per vliegtuig.*
   *De dokter zeg dat mijn tante niet te hard moet werken.*

   In this example there is only one position possible. The doctor has not prescribed that she must not work, merely that she must not work too hard.

3. Adjuncts of place
   *Ik woon niet op de achtste etage.*
   *Hij is nooit in Engeland geweest.*

   However, the negative can precede or follow *daar* or *hier.*

   *Hij is nooit daar geweest.*
   *Hij is daar nooit geweest.*
   *(Also: Daar is hij nooit geweest.)*
   *but only:*
   *Hij is er nooit geweest.*

   As *er* is an unemphatic *daar, it cannot be stressed by putting *niet/nooit* before it.

   *Ik heb niet in de tuin gewerkt.*
   *but*
   *Ik heb in de tuin niet gewerkt (maar gespeeld).*
   *Hij werkt niet in Amsterdam.*

4. Prepositional objects
   *
   *Ik had nooit aan een dergelijke oplossing gedacht.*
   *Ze heeft niet naar zijn onzin geluisterd.*
   *Ik heb het niet aan hem gegeven.*

5. Predikative adjectives
   *Het boek is niet groen.*
   *Ik ben niet rijk.*

Notes on negatives

1. ‘Not...s/any’ or ‘no + noun’ are always translated by *geen:*

   *I don’t have a car.*
   *Ik heb geen auto.*
   *I have no car.*
   *Ik heb geen geld uit.*

   He doesn’t spend any money.
   *Hij heeft geen geld uit.*

   Note: the combination *niet...een* is possible when a contrast is being made.

   *Ik heb niet in een hotel gelogeerd maar in een huis.*

   In such cases it cannot be replaced by ‘no’ in English.

2. ‘Not one’ is *niet een* or *geen een.*

   *Niet een van mijn vrienden kwam me bezoeken.*
   *Geen een van mijn vrienden kwam me bezoeken*.
   *also*  
   *Geen van mijn vrienden.* - None of my friends.

3. In colloquial Dutch ‘never...s/any’ is often expressed by *nooit...geen,* a grammatically incorrect double negative.

   *Zij hebben nooit geen auto gehad.*
   *They have never had a car.*

   It should be:

   *Zij hebben nooit een auto gehad.*
Further uses of *geen*:

The following examples show how *geen* sometimes renders a simple English 'not'.

Geese don't eat bananas.  
*Ganzen eten geen bananen.*

also

*banaan eten geen gangen niet.*  
They were not ordinary cats.  
*Het waren geen gewone katten.*

He didn't know Dutch.  
*Hij kende geen Nederlands.*

Also the expressions: *dienst hebben* (to be on duty), *dorst hebben* (to be thirsty), *haast hebben* (to be in a hurry), *honger hebben* (to be hungry), *slaap hebben* (to be sleepy), are negated by the use of *geen*, not by *niet* as in English.

*Hij had geen haast.*

He wasn't in a hurry.  
*Ze heeft geen slaap.*

She isn't sleepy.

Not... at all is translated by *helemaal niet/geen*.

I didn't think of it at all.  
*I heb er helemaal niet aan gedacht.*

I haven't got a car at all.  
*I heb helemaal geen auto.*

Not... until is translated by *pas (never niet... tot)*; in literary style *eerst* is found.

He's not coming until tomorrow.  
*Hij komt pas morgen.*

They are not coming till next Monday.  
*Zij komen pas aanstaande maandag.*

Not till then will it happen.  
*Eerst dan zal het geschieden.*

'Not... either' is translated simply by *ook niet/geen*.

I'm not going either.  
*Ik ga ook niet.*

She hasn't got one either.  
*Zij heeft er ook geen.*

'Not yet' is translated by *nog niet*:

They aren't home yet.  
*Zij zijn nog niet thuis.*

Note the following affirmative/negative couplets:

- *iets* — something  
  *iemand* — someone, -body

- *niets* — nothing  
  *niemand* — no-one, -body

- *ergens* — somewhere  
  *ooit* — ever

- *niet* — nowhere  
  *nooit* — never

- *wel* — see p. 166

Note: *nooit eerder* — never before.
Appendix 1: Letter writing

The envelope

The titles

Dr. L. Smit  –  Mr.
Mevr.  –  Mrs.
Mej.  –  Miss
Mw.  –  Ms.

Prof. H. Segers  –  Prof.
Ds.  –  Rev.
Drs.  –  (Dutch graduate title)
Dr.  –  Dr.

The address

Gildstraat 149
7762 AD HEESWIJK (N-B)

Note that the number follows the name of the street. The town or city is in the upper case and underlined when type-written and just underlined when hand-written. If it is a letter for abroad the country is given capitals and underlined, not the town. The province is often given in abbreviated form in brackets after the town if it is a little known place.

In 1978 postcodes were introduced in the Netherlands; they consist of four numbers followed by two capital letters and are placed before the name of the town, as illustrated.

Back of envelope

afz. B. de Bruin
Hoogstraat 10
2509 BA  's-GRAVENHAGE

The Dutch always put the address of the sender on the back of the envelope. The abbreviation afz. stands for afzender. Note too that Dutch names in de, den or van capitalise the main part of the name only. In telephone books etc. too such names are found under the noun not the preposition or article.

The letter

Address and date

The date is placed at the top right hand corner under the sender’s address (but this is not always included in less formal letters as it is always written on the back of the envelope):

10 september 1977

There is no dot after the numeral, nor is there a small e (abbreviation for ordinals) because in such expressions the cardinal numeral is used in Dutch. The months are always written with small letters nowadays.

Modes of address in opening a letter

1. When writing to a firm

Miene heren,
Geachte heren,
Geachte heer/mevrouw,

2. When writing to an individual one doesn’t know

Zeer geachte heer B.,
Geachte mevrouw B.,
Geachte mejuffrouw B.,

The zeer need only be used when one is being hyper-polite or writing to people in high positions, i.e. professors, politicians etc.

3. When writing to acquaintances and friends

Beste heer Meijer,
Beste mevrouw M.,
Beste mejuffrouw M.,
Beste Joop,

Particularly close friends, girl and boy friends and relatives are addressed as follows

Lieve Anneke,

Endings

1. When writing to a firm or stranger

Met de meeste hoogachting,
Hoogachtend,

If one has been in touch with the individual previously, one can replace the above with:

Met vriendelijke groet(en),
2 To acquaintances and friends one writes
   Vriendelijke/Hartelijke groeten,
This may be followed by or simply replaced by
   \{
   (Uw) Je
   Otto
In very informal letters one can end simply with
   Groetjes,
   Wim

Expressions used in formal letter writing

\begin{itemize}
\item \textbf{Uw kenmerk/referentie} \hspace{1cm} your reference
\item \textbf{ter kennisneming + name} \hspace{1cm} cc + name (put at top of letter)
\item \textbf{met verwijzing naar} \hspace{1cm} with reference to
\item \textbf{naar aanleiding van} \hspace{1cm} I would like
\item \textbf{Met verwijzing naar uw brief} \hspace{1cm} of this month
\item \textbf{van... moge ik} \hspace{1cm} on the 28th of this month
\item \textbf{Hartelijk (Vriendelijk) dank} \hspace{1cm} 28th October last
\item \textbf{voor Uw brief van 22 dezer} \hspace{1cm} as from 26th December next
\item \textbf{op 28 dezer} \hspace{1cm} your letter of the 15th of May
\item \textbf{21 okt. j.l. (jongstleden)} \hspace{1cm} Please
\item \textbf{per 26 dec. a.s. (aanstaande)} \hspace{1cm} Please send me...
\item \textbf{Uw brief d.d. 15 mei (de dato)} \hspace{1cm} Please supply further details
\item \textbf{Wilt u zo vriendelijk zijn...} \hspace{1cm} to send something by return mail
\item \textbf{Gelieve mij... te sturen} \hspace{1cm} the amount I owe you
\item \textbf{Wilt u mij nadere gegevens/} \hspace{1cm} I hereby enclose
\item \textbf{inlichtingen verstrekken} \hspace{1cm} thanking you in anticipation
\item \textbf{iets per omgaande sturen} \hspace{1cm} (for your trouble)
\item \textbf{het verschuldigde bedrag} \hspace{1cm} Looking forward to a prompt reply
\item \textbf{Ik sluit... hierbij in} \hspace{1cm} I anxiously await a reply from you
\item \textbf{Hierbij ingesloten vindt u...} \hspace{1cm} Looking forward to hearing from you
\item \textbf{U bij voorbaat (voor uw moeite)} \hspace{1cm} you
\item \textbf{dankend,} \hspace{1cm} thanking you in anticipation
\item \textbf{Uw spoedig antwoord tegemoetzijnde} \hspace{1cm} (for your trouble)
\item \textbf{Met belangstelling zie ik uw} \hspace{1cm} Looking forward to a prompt reply
\item \textbf{antwoord tegemoet} \hspace{1cm} I anxiously await a reply from you
\item \textbf{Uw antwoord zie ik te zijner tijd} \hspace{1cm} Looking forward to hearing from you
\item \textbf{gaarne tegemoet} \hspace{1cm}
\end{itemize}

\textbf{U/Uw} are still commonly written with capital letters in very formal style but this convention is fast losing ground.

Many married women in Holland sign and have letters addressed to them as follows: \textit{Mrs. A. Smit}, whose maiden name was \textit{Scherpenzeel}, would be addressed as \textit{Mevr. A. Smit-Scherpenzeel}. A married woman never adopts the initial of her husband as is sometimes done in Anglo-Saxon countries.
## Appendix 2: Proper nouns

### 1 Countries, inhabitants, nationalities, adjectives, languages

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Country</th>
<th>Man (+ plural)</th>
<th>Woman</th>
<th>Adjective (language)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Europa</td>
<td>Europeaan, Europeaans</td>
<td>Europese</td>
<td>Europe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Albanë</td>
<td>Albanees, Albanezen</td>
<td>Albanees</td>
<td>Albania</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>België</td>
<td>Belg, Belgen</td>
<td>Belgische</td>
<td>Belgium</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vlaanderen</td>
<td>Vlaamling, Vlaamingen</td>
<td>Vlaamse</td>
<td>Flanders</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wallonië</td>
<td>Waal, Walen</td>
<td>Waals</td>
<td>Wallonia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bulgarie</td>
<td>Bulgar, Bulgaren</td>
<td>Bulgaarse</td>
<td>Bulgaria</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ceylon</td>
<td>Ceylonees, Ceylonezen</td>
<td>Ceyloneese</td>
<td>Ceylon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cyprus</td>
<td>Cyprioot, Cyprioten</td>
<td>Cypriotisch</td>
<td>Cyprus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Denemarken</td>
<td>Deen, Denen</td>
<td>Deense</td>
<td>Denmark</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duitsland</td>
<td>Duitser, Duitsers</td>
<td>Duits</td>
<td>Germany</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bondsrepubliek</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Federald Republic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duitsland (BRD)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>of Germany</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Duitse</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>German Democratic Republic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demokratische Republiek (DDR)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>England</td>
<td>Engelsman, Engelsen</td>
<td>Engelse</td>
<td>Engels</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>het Verenigd Koninkrijk, Groot-Brittanië</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Estland</td>
<td>Estlander, Estlanders</td>
<td>Estlandse</td>
<td>Estlands</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Finland</td>
<td>Fin, Finnen</td>
<td>Finse</td>
<td>Estonia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frankrijk</td>
<td>Fransman, Fransen</td>
<td>Fransé</td>
<td>Finland</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Frans</td>
<td>France</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| Griekenland | Griek, Grieken                     | Griekse          | Grieks                    |
| Hongarië    | Hongaars, Hongaren                 | Hongaarse        | Hongaars                  |
| Ierland     | Jer, Ieren                         | Jerse            | Iers                      |
| IJsland     | IJslander, IJslanders              | Islandse         | IJslands                  |
| Italië      | Italiaan, Italianen                | Italiaanse       | Italiës                   |
| Joego-Slavië | Joegoslav, Joegoslaven             | Joegoslavische   | Joegoslavisch             |
| Lapland     | Lap, Lappen                        | Lapse            | Laps                      |
| Letland     | Let, Letten                        | Lettische        | Lettisch                  |
| Litouwen    | Litouwer, Litouwer                 | Litouwse         | Litouws                   |
| Malta       | Mattezer, Matzezers                | Maltese          | Maltees                   |
| Nederland   | Nederlandse, Nederlanders           | Nederlandse      | Nederlands                |
| Holland     | Hollander, Hollanders              | Hollands         | Hollands                  |
| Noorwegen   | Noor, Noron 1                      | Noorse           | Noors                     |
| Oostenrijk  | Oostenrijker, Oostenrijkers        | Oostenrijkse     | Oostenrijks               |
| Polen       | Pool, Polen                        | Poolse           | Pools                     |
| Portugal    | Portugees, Portugezen              | Portugees        | Portugese                 |
| Roemenië    | Roemeen, Roemenen                  | Roemeense        | Roemeens 2                |
| Rusland     | Rus, Russen                        | Russische, Russin| Russisch                  |
| Sovjet-Unie | Schot, Schotten                    | Schotse          | Sovjet Union              |
| Oekraïne    | Oekraïner, Oekraïners              | Oekraïnische     | Oekraïnisch               |
| Schotland   | Spanjaard, Spanjaarden             | Spaanse          | Scotland                  |
| Tjecho-Slowakije | Tsjech, Tsjechen                   | Tsjechische      | Spain                     |
| Turkije     | Turk, Turkén                       | Turkse           | Czechoeslovakia           |
| Wales       |                                    |                  | Turkey                    |

1 een Noor = a Norwegian; Noorman = Viking; Norwandiër = Norman
2 Roemeens = Rumanian; Romeins = Roman; Roemeens = Romance
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Country</th>
<th>Man (+ plural)</th>
<th>Woman</th>
<th>Adjective (language)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Zweden</td>
<td>Zweed, Zweden</td>
<td>Zweekse</td>
<td>Zweekse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zwitser, Zwitser</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Afrika</td>
<td>Afrikaan, Afrikanen</td>
<td>Afrikaanse</td>
<td>Afrikaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Algerije</td>
<td>Algerijn, Algerijnen</td>
<td>Algerijnse</td>
<td>Algerijns</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angola</td>
<td>Angolees, Angoleen</td>
<td>Angolese</td>
<td>Angolees</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Egypte</td>
<td>Egyptenaar, Egyptenaren</td>
<td>Egiptische</td>
<td>Egiptisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethiopië</td>
<td>Ethiopiër, Ethiërs</td>
<td>Ethiopische</td>
<td>Ethiopisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ghana</td>
<td>Ghaneees, Ghanetzen</td>
<td>Ghaneeese</td>
<td>Ghanaese</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guinea, Guinee</td>
<td>Guinees, Guinezen</td>
<td>Guinees</td>
<td>Guinees</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ivovorkust</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kenia</td>
<td>Keniër, Keniërs</td>
<td>Keniase</td>
<td>Keniass</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Liberia</td>
<td>Liberaan, Liberianen</td>
<td>Liberaanse</td>
<td>Liberaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Libië</td>
<td>Libiër, Libiers</td>
<td>Libische</td>
<td>Libisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marokko</td>
<td>Marokkaan, Marokkaun</td>
<td>Marokkaanse</td>
<td>Marokkaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mozambique</td>
<td>Mozambikaan, Mozambikanen</td>
<td>Mozambikaanse</td>
<td>Mozambikaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nigerië</td>
<td>Nigeraan, Nigerean</td>
<td>Nigeraanse</td>
<td>Nigeraans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oeganda</td>
<td>Oegandees, Oegandez</td>
<td>Oegandez</td>
<td>Oegandezes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rhodesia</td>
<td>Rhodesiër, Rhodesiers</td>
<td>Rhodesische</td>
<td>Rhodesisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soedan</td>
<td>Soedanees, Soedanen</td>
<td>Soedaneese</td>
<td>Soedanese</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Somalië</td>
<td>Somaliër, Somallers</td>
<td>Somaliëse</td>
<td>Somalisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tanzania*</td>
<td>Tansaniër *, Tanzaniaërs</td>
<td>Tansaniëse</td>
<td>Tansaniës</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zaire</td>
<td>Zaires, Zairez</td>
<td>Zairese</td>
<td>Zairese</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Belgisch-Kongo</td>
<td>Kongolees, Kongolezen</td>
<td>Kongolese</td>
<td>Kongolees</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zambia</td>
<td>Zambier, Zambiers</td>
<td>Zambianse</td>
<td>Zambianse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zuid-Afrika</td>
<td>Zuidafrikaan, afrikanen</td>
<td>Zuidafrikaanse</td>
<td>Zuidafrikaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>or Zuidafrikaner, -afrikaners</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Azië</td>
<td>Aziaat, Aziaten</td>
<td>Azatische</td>
<td>Aziatisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arabië (Saoedi-A.)</td>
<td>Arabiër, Arabiërs (Bedoeïen)</td>
<td>Arabische</td>
<td>Arabisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mohammedaan,</td>
<td>Mohammedaan</td>
<td>Mohammedaans</td>
<td>Mohammedaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Moslim, Moslims</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Armeenië</td>
<td>Armeenier</td>
<td>Armenische</td>
<td>Armenisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irak</td>
<td>Iraekees, Iraeken</td>
<td>Iraekeese</td>
<td>Iraaks</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Israël</td>
<td>Israëliër, Israëlli's</td>
<td>Israëlische</td>
<td>Israëlisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jordanië</td>
<td>Jordaniër, Jordaniëërs</td>
<td>Jordananse</td>
<td>Jordanas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jemen (de) Libanon</td>
<td>Jemeniet, Jemenieten</td>
<td>Jemenietische</td>
<td>Jemenietisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Palestina</td>
<td>Libanees, Libanezen</td>
<td>Libanese</td>
<td>Libanese</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perzië</td>
<td>Pers, Perzen</td>
<td>Persische</td>
<td>Persisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iran</td>
<td>Iraniër, Iraniers</td>
<td>Iranise</td>
<td>Iranis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Syrië</td>
<td>Syriër, Syriërs</td>
<td>Syrische</td>
<td>Syrisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Afghanistan</td>
<td>Afghaan, Afghanen</td>
<td>Afghaanse</td>
<td>Afghaanse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burma</td>
<td>Burmaan, Burmanen</td>
<td>Burmaanse</td>
<td>Burmaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cambodja</td>
<td>Cambodjaan, Cambodjaan</td>
<td>Cambodjaanse</td>
<td>Cambodjaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>China</td>
<td>Chinee, Chinezen</td>
<td>Chinese</td>
<td>Chinees</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Chinese</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Volksrepubliek</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Filippijiën</td>
<td>Filippijn, Filippijnen</td>
<td>Filippijnse</td>
<td>Filippijn</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* the accents are only to show the stress
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Country</th>
<th>Man (+ plural)</th>
<th>Woman</th>
<th>Adjective (language)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>India</td>
<td>Indiër, Indiërs</td>
<td>Indiase</td>
<td>Indiaas 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indonesië</td>
<td>Indoenseïër, Indoenseïrs</td>
<td>Indonesische</td>
<td>Indonesia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nederlands-Indië</td>
<td>Inlander, Inlanders (pej.)</td>
<td>Indische</td>
<td>Indisch 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Java</td>
<td>Javan, Javannen</td>
<td>Jawaanse</td>
<td>Javaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ambon</td>
<td>Ambonnees, Ambonnezen</td>
<td>Ambonese</td>
<td>Ambonese</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zuid-Molukken</td>
<td>Zuidmolukker, -molukkers</td>
<td>Zuidmolukse</td>
<td>Zuidmoluke</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Japanner, Japanners</td>
<td>Japane</td>
<td>Japans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Korea</td>
<td>Koreaan, Koreanen</td>
<td>Koreaanse</td>
<td>Koreaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Laos</td>
<td>Laotiaan, Laotianen</td>
<td>Laotiaanse</td>
<td>Laos</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maleisië</td>
<td>Maleisir</td>
<td>Maleisische</td>
<td>Maleisisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malaya</td>
<td>Maleier</td>
<td>Maleise</td>
<td>Maleis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mongolië</td>
<td>Mongool, Mongolen</td>
<td>Mongoolse</td>
<td>Mongools</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nepal</td>
<td>Nepalees, Nepalezen</td>
<td>Nepalese</td>
<td>Nepalees</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pakistan</td>
<td>Pakistan, (-ani),</td>
<td>Pakistanse</td>
<td>Pakistanans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thailand</td>
<td>Thailander, Thailanders</td>
<td>Thailands, Thaise</td>
<td>Thailands, Thais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tibet</td>
<td>Tibetian, Tibetanen</td>
<td>Tibetians</td>
<td>Tibetans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vietnam</td>
<td>Vietnamees, Vietnamezen</td>
<td>Vietnamese</td>
<td>Vietnamese</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Australië</td>
<td>Australïër, Australïërs</td>
<td>Australische</td>
<td>Australisch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nieuw Zeeland</td>
<td>Nieuwzeelander, -zeelanders 4</td>
<td>Nieuwzeelands</td>
<td>Nieuwzeelands</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nieuw Guinea de Fidji-Eilanden</td>
<td>Papoea, Papoea's</td>
<td>Nieuwguinees</td>
<td>Nieuwguinees</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amerika</td>
<td>Amerikaan, Amerikanen</td>
<td>Amerikaanse</td>
<td>Amerikaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Verenigde Staten (de USA, Y.S.)</td>
<td>Argentijn, Argentijnen</td>
<td>Argentijnse</td>
<td>Argentijns</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Argentinië</td>
<td>Argentijn, Argentijnen</td>
<td>Argentijnse</td>
<td>Argentijns</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bolivië</td>
<td>Bolivián, Bolivianen</td>
<td>Boliviense</td>
<td>Bolivians</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brazilië</td>
<td>Brasiliaan, Brazilianen</td>
<td>Brasiliaanse</td>
<td>Brasilien</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Canada</td>
<td>Canadian, Canadezen</td>
<td>Canadeze</td>
<td>Canada</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chili</td>
<td>Chileen</td>
<td>Chileense</td>
<td>Chile</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Columbia</td>
<td>Columbián, Columbianen</td>
<td>Columbiense</td>
<td>Colombia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cuba</td>
<td>Cubains, Cubanen</td>
<td>Cubanse</td>
<td>Cuba</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Dominicaanse Republiek</td>
<td>Groenlander, -landers</td>
<td>Groenlandse</td>
<td>Groenlands</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Groenland</td>
<td>Mexican, Mexicanen</td>
<td>Mexicaanse</td>
<td>Mexico</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jamaica</td>
<td>Azteke, Azteken</td>
<td>Azteekse</td>
<td>Azteks</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antillen</td>
<td>Antiliaan, -anen</td>
<td>Antilliaanse</td>
<td>Antillians</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aruba</td>
<td>Arubaan, Arubanen</td>
<td>Arubaanse</td>
<td>Arubaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Panama</td>
<td>Panamees, Panamezen</td>
<td>Panamese</td>
<td>Panamees</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paragua</td>
<td>Paraguáan, Paraguanen</td>
<td>Paraguaanse</td>
<td>Paraguans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peru</td>
<td>Peruán, Peruanen</td>
<td>Peruanse</td>
<td>Peruans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Porto-Rico</td>
<td>Portoricaan, Portoricanen</td>
<td>Portoricaanse</td>
<td>Portoricans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suriname</td>
<td>Surinamer, Surinames</td>
<td>Surinamese</td>
<td>Surinames</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Uruguay</td>
<td>Uruguaan, Uruguanen</td>
<td>Uruguaanse</td>
<td>Uruguaans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Venezuela</td>
<td>Venezolán, Venezolanen</td>
<td>Venezolaanse</td>
<td>Venezolaans</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3 Indonesia/Indians – American Indian.
Hindo(o)esian, Hindo(o)esians are often used as synonyms for Indiër Indiër – especially for Indians in Surinam even if they happen to be Muslim.
Indisch = Indonesian prior to 1950 and is still used in literature and by ex-colonials.

4 An inhabitant of the Dutch province of Zeeland is a Zeewe.
### Notes on nationalities

a The names of female inhabitants are not ever used in the plural with very few exceptions, eg. Engelsen, Françaises, Russinnen; otherwise the plural is avoided by paraphrasing, eg. Die meisjes komen uit Australië or Die meisjes zijn Australisch.

b Nowadays one sees in progressive publications the ending -isch spelt -ies. This is not an official alternative, however.

c When saying 'I am a Palestinian' etc. the indefinite article is often omitted in more formal style, i.e. Ik ben Palestijn (see p. 21).

d Note that words ending in -ees go -ese in the feminine or when the adjective is inflected, but the plural of the masculine is always -een.

e Countries for which there is no special word for the inhabitant or that have no particular adjectival form, usually paraphrase, i.e. Hij komt uit Taiwan, deze rum is van Jamaica, olie uit Koeweit.

f Countries ending in -ije take the stress on the -ij.

g Several countries have a different stress from English, eg. Sovjet-Unie, Céylon, Oekraïne.

### 2 Geographical names

#### Dutch provinces

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dutch provinces</th>
<th>Inhabitant (female)</th>
<th>Adjective</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Noord-Holland</td>
<td>(Noord-)Hollander (Hollands)</td>
<td>Noordhollander</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zuid-Holland</td>
<td>(Zuid-)Hollander (Hollands)</td>
<td>Zuidhollander</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zeeland</td>
<td>Zeeuw (Zeeuws)</td>
<td>Zeeuw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Noord-Brabant</td>
<td>(Noord-)Brabander (Brabantse)</td>
<td>Brabant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Limburg</td>
<td>Limburger (Limburgse)</td>
<td>Limburg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gelderland</td>
<td>Gelderlander (Gelderlandse)</td>
<td>Gelder</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Utrecht</td>
<td>Utrechtenaar (Utrechtse)</td>
<td>Utrecht</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Overijssel</td>
<td>Overijsseler</td>
<td>Overijssel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drenthe</td>
<td>Drenthe (Drentse)</td>
<td>Drenthe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Groningen</td>
<td>Groninger (Groningse)</td>
<td>Groningen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friesland</td>
<td>Fries (Friesin)</td>
<td>Fries</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Proincial capitals

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Proincial capitals</th>
<th>Adjective</th>
<th>Inhabitant</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Haarlem</td>
<td>Haarlems²</td>
<td>Haarlemmer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'s Gravenhage, Den Haag</td>
<td>Haag</td>
<td>Hagenaar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Middelburg</td>
<td>Middelburgs</td>
<td>Middelburger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'s Hertogenbosch, Den Bosch</td>
<td>Bosch (Bosche)</td>
<td>Boschenaar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maastricht</td>
<td>Maastrichts</td>
<td>Maastrichtenaar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arnhem</td>
<td>Arnhems</td>
<td>Arnhemmer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Utrecht</td>
<td>Utrechts</td>
<td>Utrechtenaar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zwolle</td>
<td>Zwols</td>
<td>Zwollenaar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Assen</td>
<td>Assens</td>
<td>Assenaar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Groningen</td>
<td>Gronings³</td>
<td>Groninger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leeuwarden</td>
<td>Leeuwardiens</td>
<td>Leeuwander</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Belgian provinces

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Belgian provinces (W. Flanders)</th>
<th>Inhabitant (female)</th>
<th>Adjective</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>West-Vlaanderen (W. Flanders)</td>
<td>(West)Vlaaming (Vlaamse)</td>
<td>Westvlaams</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oost-Vlaanderen</td>
<td>(Oost)Vlaaming (Vlaamse)</td>
<td>Oostvlaams</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note: The towns Leiden and Gouda and the region Twente have their own irregular adjectival forms: Leids, Gouds; Twents.

Town ending in -dam take the stress on -dam, eg. Amsterdam, Edam etc. The inhabitant is an Amsterdammer etc.

---

1 The inhabitants of Utrecht are also known as Utrechters.
2 *de Friese taal* but *de Friese* (compare Chinees, Portugees etc.).
3 In some standard contexts an adjectival form in -er is heard, eg. Groninger koek, Haarlemmer olie.
Antwerpen (Antwerp)
Brabant
Limburg
Luik (Liège)
Namur (Namur)
Luxemburg
Henegouwen (Hainaut)

Provincial capitals

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Capital</th>
<th>Adjective</th>
<th>Inhabitant</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Brugge</td>
<td>Brugs</td>
<td>Bruggeling</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gent</td>
<td>Gents</td>
<td>Gentenaar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antwerpen</td>
<td>Antwerps</td>
<td>Antwerpenaar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brussels</td>
<td>Brussels</td>
<td>Brusellaar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hasselt</td>
<td>Hasselt</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luik</td>
<td>Luiks</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Namen</td>
<td>Naams</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aarlen</td>
<td>Arlon</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bergen</td>
<td>Mons</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Other important Belgian cities with two names (i.e. Dutch, French)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>City</th>
<th>Dutch Name</th>
<th>French Name</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Doornik</td>
<td>Tournai</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kortrijk</td>
<td>Courtrai</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leuven</td>
<td>Louvain</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oostende</td>
<td>Ostend</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Other cities with different names in Dutch from English (corresponding adjectives given in brackets)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>City</th>
<th>Dutch Name</th>
<th>French Name</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Aken</td>
<td>Aix-La-Chapelle</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Athene</td>
<td>Athens</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berlijn</td>
<td>Berlin</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Belgrado</td>
<td>Belgrade</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boedapest</td>
<td>Budapest</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boekarest</td>
<td>Bucharest</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dauinkerken</td>
<td>Dunkirk</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Florence</td>
<td>Florence</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frankfurt</td>
<td>Frankfurt</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Genève</td>
<td>Geneva</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Gotenburg
Kairo
Keulen (Keuls)
Kopenhagen
Lissabon
Londen
München
Milaan (Milanees)
Moskou
Napels
Neuenberg
Paris
Praag
Rome (Romains)
Riijs(s)el
Strasbourg
Tanger
Turijn
Venetië
Warschau
Wenen (Weens)

If there is not a specifically Dutch name for a town, the Dutch usually attempt to pronounce the name as in the language of the country concerned. In some cases they adapt the spelling to the sounds of Dutch, this is particularly the case with African and Asian names, eg. Kinsjasa, Loesaka, Mekka, Addis Abéba.

Other cities with different names in Dutch from English (corresponding adjectives given in brackets)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>City</th>
<th>French Name</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>de Donau</td>
<td>Danube</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Maas</td>
<td>Meuse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Moezel</td>
<td>Moselle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Rijn</td>
<td>Rhine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Roer</td>
<td>Ruhr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Schelde</td>
<td>Scheldt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Theems</td>
<td>Thames</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Provinces and regions of other European countries (corresponding inhabitant and adjective given in brackets)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Region</th>
<th>Corresponding Name</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>de Balkan, -staten</td>
<td>Balkans</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baskenland (Bask, Baskisch)</td>
<td>Basque country</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beieren (Beier, Beiers)</td>
<td>Bavaria</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Bohemen (Bohemer, Boheems)
Bretagne (Bretons)
Canarische Eilanden
Croatië (Croaat, Croatisch)
Elzas (Elzasser, Elzassisch)
Gallië (Galliër, Gallisch)
Kaukasus (Kaukasisch)
Kreta (Kretenser, Kretensisch)
Lombardije (Lombardisch)
Lotharingen
Normandië (Normandiër, Norma-ndisch)
Picardië
Pruisen (Pruis, Pruisisch)
Rhodos
Saksen (Saks, Saksisch)
Sardinië
Servië (Serviër, Servisch)
Siberië
Sicilië (Siciliaan, Siciliaans)
Sleeswijk
Stiermarken
Tirol (Tiroler, Tirols)
Zwaben (Zwaab, Zwaabs)

Other geographical areas

de Alpen
de Atlantische Oceaan
Bengalen
de Bodemsee
het Caribische Gebied
de Caribische Zee
de Golf van Biscaye
De Golf van Bengalen
de Indische Oceaan
Kaap de Goede Hoop
Het Kanaal
de Kasjpoërsee
de Krim
de Middennederlandse Zee
Midden-Europa
het Nabije Oosten
de Noordpool
de Noordzee
de Oostbloklanden
de Oostzee
de Perzische Golf
deu Roergebied
de Stille Oceaan
het Verre Oosten
de Vogesen
Vuurland
de Zuidpool
de Zuidzee
de Zwarte Zee
het Zwarte Woud

3 Historical personages

When referring to well-known people who have names normally written in an alphabet other than the Latin alphabet, the names are usually transcribed according to Dutch phonetics.

Kroetsjew, Kaoenda, Tsjechow etc. Also de Likoed (Israeli political party)

Kings of England, France, Germany etc. as well as popes are also given Dutch names where such exist (see also p. 226):

Karel (Charles), Jacobus (James), Lodewijk (Louis, Ludwig), Boudewijn (Baudouin, Baldwin), Hendrik (Henry, Heinrich), Jan (John, Johann).

Karel de Grote
Lodewijk Napoleon
Jacobus de Tweede
Johannes XXIV

Note: Calvin - Calvin, Galilei - Galileo.
Appendix 3: Common Dutch abbreviations  
(afkortingen)

Abbreviations can be of three kinds:

1. those that are simply a form of short-hand and which are read aloud as the words they represent, eg. *f* = *gulden*, *b.v.* = *bijvoorbeeld*.

2. those that are regarded as words in themselves and may (and usually are) pronounced using the letters, eg. *KLM* pronounced *KA-EL-EM*. Such abbreviations are designated by an asterisk in the list below.

3. a few abbreviations are read as words in themselves, not as letters. These are designated with +.

Many abbreviations can take an article which agrees in gender with the final noun in the name, eg. *het KNMI* because *instituut* is neuter. Sometimes other words are formed from these abbreviations, eg. *de A.O.W.* = *de Algemene Ouderdomswet*, hence *een AOW-er* = a pensioner; *de NSB* = *de Nationaal-Socialistische Bond*, hence *een NSB-er* = a Dutch Nazi.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(het) ABN*</td>
<td>Algemeen Beschaafd Nederlands</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) ABN*</td>
<td>Algemene Bank Nederland</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(het) ANP*</td>
<td>Algemeen Nederlands Persbureau</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) ANWB*</td>
<td>Algemene Nederlandse Wielrijdersbond</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) AOW(-er)*</td>
<td>Algemene Ouderdomswet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a.s.</td>
<td>aangstaande</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aug.</td>
<td>augustus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) AVRO*</td>
<td>Algemene Vereniging Radio Omroep</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) AWW(-er)*</td>
<td>Algemene Weduwen- en Wezenwet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bl.</td>
<td>blad(e)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) BRD</td>
<td>Bondsrepubliek Duitsland</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) BTW*</td>
<td>Belasting Toegevoegde Waarde</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) B. V.</td>
<td>besloten vennootschap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(het) CDA*</td>
<td>Christen-Democratisch Appèl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cle</td>
<td>compagnie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. S.</td>
<td>centraal station</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CRM*</td>
<td>Cultuur, Recreatie en Maatschappelijk Werk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dec.</td>
<td>december</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>darg., dgl.</td>
<td>dergelijke</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dhr.</td>
<td>de heer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d.l.</td>
<td>dat is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dr.</td>
<td>dokter, doctor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>drs.</td>
<td>doctorandus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ds.</td>
<td>dominee</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d.w.z.</td>
<td>dat wil zeggen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e.d.</td>
<td>en dergelijke</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) EEG*, EG*</td>
<td>Europese (Economische) Gemeenschap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EBO</td>
<td>Eerste Hulp bij Ongelukken</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>enz.</td>
<td>enzovoort(s)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) EO*</td>
<td>Evangelische Omroep</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>excl.</td>
<td>exclusief</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f.</td>
<td>florijn (= <em>gulden</em>)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>febr.</td>
<td>februari</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fr.</td>
<td>frank (eg. 50 fr.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fr.</td>
<td>Fryslân</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>geb.</td>
<td>geboren</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) gebr.</td>
<td>gebroeders</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gld.</td>
<td>Gelderland</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gr.</td>
<td>Groningen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) H.A.V.O.*</td>
<td>hoger algemeen voortgezet onderwijs (school)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(de) H.B.S.*</td>
<td>hogere burgerschool</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H. fl.</td>
<td>Hollandse florijn (= <em>gulden</em>)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H. K. H.</td>
<td>Hare Koninklijke Hoogheid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(het) H. O.*</td>
<td>Hoger Onderwijs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hs. (hss.)</td>
<td>handschrift (handschriften)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>incl.</td>
<td>inclusief</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l.p.v.</td>
<td>in plaats van</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jan.</td>
<td>januari</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jgr.</td>
<td>jangang</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jhr.</td>
<td>Jonkheer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jkvr.</td>
<td>Jonkvrouw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j.l.</td>
<td>jongstleden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>company</td>
<td>a Dutch ministry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>December</td>
<td>and such Mr.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and such</td>
<td>i.e. Doctor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i.e.</td>
<td>a Dutch academic title</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reverend</td>
<td>(M.A.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and such</td>
<td>(European) Common Market</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>First Aid</td>
<td>a broadcasting association</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>etcetera</td>
<td>excluding</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a broadcasting</td>
<td>guilder</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>association</td>
<td>February</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>excluding</td>
<td>franc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>guilder</td>
<td>Friesland</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>brothers</td>
<td>born</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gelderland</td>
<td>brothers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Groningen</td>
<td>Groningen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>school</td>
<td>a form of secondary school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>guilders</td>
<td>Her Royal Highness</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot;</td>
<td>tertiary education</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot;</td>
<td>manuscript(s)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>instead of</td>
<td>including</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>January</td>
<td>instead of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>volume, series</td>
<td>January</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aristocratic title (Lord)</td>
<td>volume, series</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aristocratic title (Lady)</td>
<td>aristocratic title (Lady)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>last, past</td>
<td>last, past</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Index

The numbers given are page numbers. In many instances relevant information is also to be found on the pages immediately following the page indicated here.

aan:
- after adjectives 81
- after verbs 185
- inseparable prefix 182
- preposition 205
- separable prefix 180
- abbreviations: 260
gender of 260
Abbruters: 116, 125-133
- imperfect 116
- past participles 118
- accents: 14
- acute 14
- emphasis 14
- French words 14
- grave 14
- acute accent: 14
- address:
- forms of 52
- letters 244
adjectival adjectives:
- expressing passive voice 164
- replacing relative clauses 67
- adjectives: 74-91
- after nouns 90
- case remnants 77
- comparative 77
- colour 89
- formation of 84
- inflection of 74
- nationality 16, 76, 78, 80, 84, 90, 248-258
- predicative followed by preposition 81-83
- prefixed to nouns 90
- prefixes 87
- spelling changes 76
- suffixes 84
- superlative 79
- used as nouns 31, 84
- used only predicatively or attributively 80
- with nouns 90
adverbs: 92-111
- as conjunctions 199
- comparative 92
- diminutive 48
- formation of 110
- inflection of 94
- intensifying 94
- interrogative 109
- of manner 108
- of place + direction 106
- of time 95-106
- superlative 93
- with meer 78, 93
- with meest 79, 93
- word order of 95
akkoord: 228
al:
- adverb 96, 97, 103, 121
- all 71
alle: 71
- allesbeul 70
- allemaal 71
alleen:
- conjunction 190, 199
als:
- conjunction 124, 193
- preposition 21, 197, 206
and:
- omission of 91, 190, 223, 226
ander:
- indefinite pronoun 70
- apostrophe:
- possession 15, 42
- plural 35
- arithmetic: 228
articles:
- definite 22
- indefinite 21
as... as:
- replaced by compound adjective 88
- so... als 88
be-t: 117, 118, 182
before:
- adverb 104
- conjunction 192, 201
- preposition 15, 217
beginnen:
- past tenses 130
- perfect tense with re 155
- with auxiliary 142
1 In de W.W. lopen – to be on unemployment benefits.
reflexive:
- pronouns 60, 61, 68, 171-176
- verbs 171
- position of object 171
regions: 257
relative clauses: 62-68
- replaced by adjectival adverbs 67, 164
- replacing -ing constructions 170
- use of comma 18
- word order in 64
relative pronouns: 62-67
- dat 63
- die 63
- heren 66, 67
- hemel 67
- indefinite antecedents 64
- independent 66
- preceded by preposition 63
- welk(s) 65, 67
- whose 65
- wiers/wier 65
- rivers: 257
- seasons: 99
separable:
- prefixes 179
- position of 157, 180
- verbs 179-181
- position of re 157
- tenses of 180
- with prepositions 220
should:
- conditional 149, 150
sommege:
- indefinite pronoun 70
spelling: 14-17
- accents 14
- apostrophe 15, 35, 42
- capital letters; see also 'capital letters'
- hyphen 16
- days and months 231
- diacritics 16, 35, 37
- medial sounds 16
- new trends 17, 254
- syllable division 17
stems:
- continuous tenses 154, 165
- part tenses 125
- present tense 114
- replacing 'to be' 146, 235
- stress: 13
- adjectival endings 84
- months of the year 231
- shift in compound words 90
- verbal prefixes 180, 182
- strong verbs: 112
- classes of 125-133
- future 119
- imperfect 116
- list of 125-133
- past participles 118
- as adjectives 118
- perfect 117
- pluperfect 119
subject pronouns: 50
- die 57
- dit 54
- hij 53
- jullie 51, 53
- men 52, 165
- u 52
subjunctive:
- formation of 160
- of hebben 136
- use of 160
- of zijn 140
subordinate:
- clauses - use of comma 18
- word order in 97, 192
- conjunctions 192-198
suffixes:
- adjectival 84, 89
- adverbial 110
- -eren 116, 117
- feminine 41
superlative:
- absolute 80
- adverbs 92
- compound adjectives 80
- formation of 79, 92
- inflection of 79, 92
- use of 78, 80, 93
- with meet 79, 93
syntax:
- after co-ordinating conjunctions 97, 190
- after subordinating conjunctions 97, 192
- direct - indirect objects 38
- in relative clauses 63
- order of verbs in passive 164
- position of er - see er
- position of infinitives 154
- position of niet/nooit 239
- position of object with reflexive verbs 171
- position of ook 203, 242
- position of preposition with er 56, 236
- position of preposition with waar 63, 73
- position of separable prefixes 180
- position of verbs in compound tenses - see 'tense' and respective tenses
- predicative adjectives and prepositions 81
- with adverbs 95, 199
- te:
- om te 157
- preposition 214
- replacing-ing clauses 168
- ten, ter 20, 217
- use of 154-158
- with separable prefixes 158, 181
- tegen:
- after adjectives 81
- after verbs 187
- preposition 214
- separable prefix 180
- with time 230
temperature: 228
tense: 112-125
- conditional 120, 124
- conditional perfect 120, 125
- continuous 165
- emphatic 166
- formation of 112-121
- future 119, 124
- imperfect 115, 122
- perfect 117, 123
- pluperfect 119, 124
- present 112, 121
- present continuous 165
- present emphatic 166
- progressive 165
- use of 121-125
time: 230
- adverbs of 95
- expressions of 98-106
't koffiehuis: 115
toch: 191
today: 98
toen:
- adverb 105
- conjunction 122, 193
tomorrow: 98
tot/Toe:
- after adjectives 81
- after maar 106, 219
- after verbs 188
- preposition 215
- separable prefix 180
- transitve verbs: 177
- auxiliary hebben 177
- used reflexively 173
u:
- possessive form 58
- reflexive of 172
- replaced by jullie 51
- spelling 246
- use of 52
- verb forms 137, 139
uit:
- after adjectives 81
- after verbs 188
- preposition 215
- separable prefix 143, 180
unemphatic pronouns: 50
used to: 123, 135, 137
wel: 70, 77
- indefinite pronoun 70
ver: 117, 118, 143, 182, 184
verbs: 112-189
- auxiliaries - see zijn and hebben
- imperfects 158
- impersonal 178
- ing forms 166, 168
- inseparable 123
- intransitive 137
- irregular 135, 136
- mixed 134, 136
- modals 135, 146-153
- monosyllabic 114, 166
- passive voice 161
- position in relative clauses 62, 64
- - prepositions 185-189
- present participle 166
- reflexive 171
- separable 180
- strong - see 'strong verbs'
- subjunctive - see 'subjunctive'
- tense - see 'tense'
- transitive 171
- weak - see 'weak verbs'
vergeten:
- past tenses 132
- with auxiliary 132, 145
verscheidene:
- indefinite pronoun 70
verschillende:
- indefinite pronoun 70
voor:
- after adjectives 81
- after verbs 188
- inseparable prefix 182
- preposition 217
- separable prefix 180
- with time 97, 230
voorkeurspelling: 14, 17
waar:
- interrogative 73, 203
- relative 63
wanneer:
- conjunction 105, 193
- interrogative 109, 203
want:
- conjunction 190
weak verbs: 112
- future 119
- imperfect 115
- perfect 117
- pluperfect 119
weights: 232
Recommended texts for future reference

Apeldoorn, C.G.L.  
Afkortingenlexicon  
Spectrum, Utrecht, 2nd ed. 1976

Coninck, R.H.B.  
Groot Uitspraakwoordenboek van de Nederlandse Taal  
De Nederlandse Boekhandel, Antwerp 1970

Hermkens, H.M.  
Spelling en Interpunctie  
Malmberg, Den Bosch

Hertog, C.H. den  
Nederlandse Spraakkunst — bewerkt door H. Hulshof  
Versluys, Amsterdam

Kruyskamp, C.  
(Van Dale) Groot Woordenboek der Nederlandse Taal  
Martinus Nijhoff, The Hague, 10th ed. 1976

Rijpma, E. and Schuringa, F.G.  
Nederlandse Spraakkunst  
Wolters-Noordhoff, Groningen, 1969

Shetter, W.Z.  
Introduction to Dutch  

Smit, J. and Meijer, R.  
Dutch Grammar and Reader  
Stanley Thornes, London, 1976

Tack, J.P.M.  
Nederlandse Spraakkunst voor Iedereen  
Spectrum, Utrecht, 10th ed. 1978

Toorn, M.C. van den  
Nederlandse Grammatica  
Tjeenk Willink, Groningen, 1976

Vooys, C.G.N. de  
Nederlandse Spraakkunst  
Wolters-Noordhoff, Groningen, 7th ed. 1967

Zandvoort, R.W.  
A Handbook of English Grammar  